

1 Timothy

Introduction

Chapter 1

[1 Timothy 1:1-7](#)

[1 Timothy 1:8-20](#)

Chapter 2

[1 Timothy 2:1-4](#)

[1 Timothy 2:5-6](#)

[1 Timothy 2:7-8](#)

[1 Timothy 2:9-15](#)

Chapter 3

[1 Timothy 3:1-7](#)

[1 Timothy 3:8-13](#)

[1 Timothy 3:14-16](#)

Chapter 4

[1 Timothy 4:1-5](#)

[1 Timothy 4:6-16](#)

Chapter 5

[1 Timothy 5:1-16](#)

[1 Timothy 5:17 – 6:2](#)

Chapter 6

[1 Timothy 6:3-10](#)

[1 Timothy 6:11-21](#)

Topical Messages:

[Why Do We Study Prophecy \(6:14\)](#)

[Science Fiction \(6:20\)](#)

Introduction

The Book of Timothy, written around 64-67AD. Paul the aged and experienced apostle writes to the young Pastor Timothy. Timothy traveled with Paul on his second missionary journey, and they had a special bond. Paul as we read in chapter one calls Timothy a true son in the faith.

Their bond was so close that Paul said no one else thinks so much like me than Timothy. **Philippians 2:19–20 (NKJV)** ¹⁹ But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy to you shortly, that I also may be encouraged when I know your state. ²⁰ For I have no one like-minded, who will sincerely care for your state.

Paul and Timothy's story begins back in Acts 16 when Paul take him with him on his second missionary journey, and there this special father son relationship begins, and will last until Paul dies.

Acts 16:1–5 (NKJV) ¹ Then he came to Derbe and Lystra. And behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain Jewish woman who believed, but his father was Greek. ² He was well spoken of by the brethren who were at Lystra and Iconium. ³ Paul wanted to have him go on with him. And he took him and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in that region, for they all knew that his father was Greek. ⁴ And as they went through the cities, they delivered to them the decrees to keep, which were determined by the apostles and elders at Jerusalem. ⁵ So the churches were strengthened in the faith, and increased in number daily.

As Paul would establish churches and move on, we read that he would often leave Timothy behind to help those churches in their growth. As we will read this letter, we will see that although Timothy is in leadership, he still struggles with how to handle certain situations, he is still growing in his own maturity, and in leadership. I believe this book is applicable to all of us in some way or another because we are in the ministry in some form or fashion. Some teach bible Studies to adults, others are raising kids, some.....

Paul writes to Timothy so that he may know how the church is to function.

The Theme of this letter:

1 Timothy 3:14–16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

The Outline:

- The Church and its Message – Chapter 1
- The Church and its Members – Chapter 2 & 3
- The Church and its Minister – Chapter 4
- The Church and its Ministry to Itself – Chapter 5
- The Church and its Motives – Chapter 6

Paul will instruct Timothy how the church is function, but understand this, the church is both corporately, and individually. The things taught in this book are for us as a group, the church and its four walls, and for us individually, for we are the temple of God, we are the body of Christ, the sum of individuals make up the Church Body.

These books (1&2 Timothy and Titus) have been called the Pastoral Epistles. For they help instruct ministers on how to serve in the ministry.

The second theme of this book, is chapter 1, verse 12:

(1 Timothy 1:12 NKJV) And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord who has enabled me, because He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry,

Maybe we get the thoughts why am I doing this? What's the deal? I'm tired, sometimes people don't like me, sometimes I pour myself into them, and they walk away at the end. But though those thoughts come, they are only fleeting, for I am thankful for being put into the ministry.

We may say that's great, you teach Bible studies, do the ministry thing, but that doesn't apply to me.

(John 15:5 NKJV) "I am the vine, you are the branches. He who abides in Me, and I in him, bears much fruit; for without Me you can do nothing."

Are you a disciple of Jesus Christ, are you one who loves Him, and chose to follow Him, well then welcome to the ministry. We might not all do it vocationally, but we are all engaged in the ministry. Like Paul we should say, I am thankful for being called into the ministry. You may say why should I be? Let me give you 7 short reasons to be happy, and then when you read 1 Timothy, you will see how book applies to you.

1.) Looking Around:

You see when I look around, I am thankful I am in the ministry. When I look around me, the people who substance, solid in their walk, are the ones who are active in the ministry, they talk of the Lord experientially. These people have a solid foundation, for they know the word and walk in faith. Serving in the ministry causes them to seek the Lord for His power.

The children of Israel, when they journeyed those forty years in the wilderness would set up the Tabernacle right in the middle of the people. It was where God would dwell among His people, there in the Holy of Holies. In the Holy of Holies was the "Mercy Seat" and the glory of God, the Shikinah glory, was over the mercy seat.

The word Glory in the Hebrew: kabowd, kaw-bode' **weight, substance**, splendor, or copiousness: --glorious (-ly), glory, honour (-able).

Guess who got to camp right around the tent, the closest to the glory, (Numbers chapter 3) the Levites those involved in service got to camp closest to the glory, the weight, the substance, the kabowd. I find this true in the kingdom, those that are serving the Lord get to camp closest to the Lord. When I am serving the Lord, teaching, sharing, ministering to someone, that is when I get to receive and see His glory the most. I see that among the people who serve the Lord as I look around, they camp closest to the Lord, they have substance compared to the flash and emptiness of the Lord.

Outline (Thankful for Being Put into the Ministry):

1. Looking Around – seeing those with substance

2.) Looking Within

When I look within myself, I am thankful I am in the ministry because ministry fills me.

(Luke 6:38 NKJV) "Give, and it will be given to you: good measure, pressed down, shaken together, and running over will be put into your bosom. For with the same measure that you use, it will be measured back to you."

The degree you give out, is the degree you get back. I know when I am not serving or giving out, I'm not getting back. I get blessed studying the word to give out, I take in tenfold what I give out. For you it may be baking a cake for someone, writing a check, serving at the soup kitchen, visiting the assisted living.

You know what, even if they aren't listening or fully receiving, it still comes back on you.

Be thankful that you get to give out so that you get to take in, think how empty your life would be, but now how full it is because you give out.

Outline (Thankful for Being Put into the Ministry):

1. Looking Around – seeing those with substance
2. Looking Within – seeing how full my life is

3.) Looking Down

I am thankful to be in the ministry when I look down at the tactics of Satan.

(Deuteronomy 25:17 NKJV) "Remember what Amalek did to you on the way as you were coming out of Egypt, (Deuteronomy 25:18 NKJV) "how he met you on the way and attacked your rear ranks, all the stragglers at your rear, when you were tired and weary; and he did not fear God.

The most dangerous place to be as we travel on this earth, through this life, unto heaven, is in the back of the pack. You say I'll make it to church if I get up on time, depends how late we get out of the movies. I have devotion times if I get up on time. What is happening is that you are moving to the back of the pack, and you will get pick-off.

The gazelle wakes up daily in Africa and says I must run faster than the fastest lion or I'll die. The lion wakes up and says I'll have to run faster than the slowest gazelle or I'll starve. The moral of the story is that you must wake up running or you'll be eaten or dead.

When we wake up we have to know that the enemy is chasing us:

(1 Peter 5:8 NKJV) Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil walks about like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour.

Satan goes for those who are in the back of the pack. I am thankful because ministry causes me to be in the word and prayer. Ministry is for your protection, so you don't get picked off. God wants all of you in the ministry, so you have to start your day off running.

Maybe, you feel it is too late for you to be used by God because of a past sin, a past failing. I am reminded of Joshua 21 and the inheritance of the land (specifically for Levi and Simeon). Although the Levites were not given territory, as were the other tribes, they were given cities within the territories of the other tribes. The Levites were those who worked in the tabernacle, those who cared for the spiritual life of the people of Israel. The priests all came from the tribe of Levi, but not all Levites were priests. To be a priest, one had to be a descendant of Aaron. The Levites were spread out over forty-eight cities. This meant that every Israelite was near to a Levitical community, near to men who knew the Scriptures and were dedicated to serving the Lord.

As we have seen, Levi, along with Simeon, was to have no inheritance due to his dealing with Shechem (Genesis 32, 49). Yet the curse on Levi was reversed and transformed into a major blessing when the Lord said, "Levi, I will be your inheritance. You'll be scattered everywhere in order to serve Me, and your cities will be protected by the rest of the nation." Simeon and Levi were both cursed, but God reversed the curse upon Levi. Why? I believe the answer lies in Exodus 32:28.

The day Moses came down from Mount Sinai with the Ten Commandments in hand, the people were dancing around a golden calf. "Who is on the Lord's side?" Moses said. "Who will deal with this sin?" Only one tribe volunteered—the tribe of Levi. The Levites unsheathed their swords and went throughout the congregation dealing with their friends and relatives. It was painful, but they had to do it because the tribe of Levi knew, perhaps better than anyone, that sin cannot go unchecked.

God can take our sin and turn it around for good. He can reverse the curse even today. Wherever you've been, whatever you've done, if you repent and say, "Lord, from here on out, I'm going Your way," He'll turn the mistakes you've made around for good. Oh, the scars will still be there. But God will open new doors and do wonderful things in your life. You'll be more blessed than you could have ever imagined if—and only if—you repent. Simeon didn't. Evidently the men of Simeon didn't want to offend their friends or family, so they stood on the sidelines. As a result, centuries later, the land Simeon was given was eventually swallowed up.

Say, "I know I shouldn't be doing that anymore, but I don't want to be different. My teammates, my roommates, everyone is going there and doing that and I don't want to stand out. I don't want to be too radical, so I'll just go to church when I can, fit in there as much as I can, and then when I'm with the guys, I'll fit in with them," and you'll end up like Simeon. You'll disappear into nothingness. Oh, you'll still go to heaven, but your life and impact will be tragically diminished. You'll look in the mirror at age fifty, sixty, or seventy, and say, "I'm basically nothing because I wanted to fit in."

On the other hand, say, "I was wrong. I messed up badly. Lord, I repent"—and God will use even your mistakes. You'll minister to Him, make an impact for Him, and be blessed by Him. I know you've dropped the ball. I know you've messed up. We all have because all we like sheep have gone astray (Isaiah 53:6). But the curse can be reversed. God can give you a dynamic life and a dynamic ministry if you, like Levi, unsheathe the sword and say, "Enough is enough. I'm going on record. I'm standing for the Lord from here on out." It's all a matter of repentance, of changing directions. Simeon didn't and he's in the middle of Judah, swallowed up by a greater tribe. Levi did, and they're involved in ministry throughout forty-eight cities, serving in the temple. Two men committed the same sin. One chose to repent, the other didn't, and the difference in their lives is unmistakable. (Courson)

Outline (Thankful for Being Put into the Ministry):

1. Looking Around – seeing those with substance
2. Looking Within – seeing how full my life is compared to the emptiness of the world
3. Looking Down – seeing the tactics of the enemy so I start the day running

4.) Looking Back

I am thankful to be in the ministry when I look back and see lives changed by ministries, I was blessed to be part of.

What a blessing to look back and see lives changed forever, for eternity, because of ministry. To watch people, grow, become excited about the Lord, the things of the Lord, to watch marriages be healed, to watch addictions be kicked, to watch people be ushered into the Kingdom.....it is glorious.

People invested in me, and now it is time for me to invest in others.

Several years ago, Ray Comfort invested in me, just 20 minutes, but it was worth eternity. He took 20 minutes to share some points about evangelism, which in-turn I have taught others, and people are going to spend eternity in heaven because of it. Pastor Ted Mueller took me on two mission trips, I watched and learned, now I lead missions.

You will never know what it means when you spend 30 minutes with someone sharing the truths and love of the Lord. You parents, you youth leader, you upperclassman in your school.

But now that I'm grown up, it's my turn. It is time for me to do what men did for me.

(2 Timothy 2:2 NKJV) And the things that you have heard from me among many witnesses, commit these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also.

Outline (Thankful for Being Put into the Ministry):

1. Looking Around – seeing those with substance
2. Looking Within – seeing how full my life is compared to the emptiness of the world
3. Looking Down – seeing the tactics of the enemy so I start the day running
4. Looking Back – seeing those who I have invested in living for God

5.) Looking Ahead

I am thankful to be in the ministry when I look ahead, for when I stand before the Judgement Seat of Christ, and be judged for my service to the Lord, I will be glad that I served.

Hebrews 6:10–12 (NKJV) ¹⁰ For God is not unjust to forget your work and labor of love which you have shown toward His name, in that you have ministered to the saints, and do minister. ¹¹ And we desire that each one of you show the same diligence to the full assurance of hope until the end, ¹² that you do not become sluggish, but imitate those who through faith and patience inherit the promises.

Believer, there is a judgment for you to come. Not a judgment of sin and salvation, for that was paid in full on the cross. Not the white Throne judgment spoken of in Revelation 20, that is for all those who never received Jesus as Lord and Savior.

Revelation 20:11–15 (NKJV) ¹¹ Then I saw a great white throne and Him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. And there was found no place for them. ¹² And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God, and books were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books. ¹³ The sea gave up the dead who were in it, and Death and Hades delivered up the dead who were in them. And they were judged, each one according to his works. ¹⁴ Then Death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. ¹⁵ And anyone not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire.

But the Believer will face the “Bema Seat” the “Judgment Seat of Christ” and be judged according to your works here on earth.

Remember our Resurrection/Rapture Study, this passage is written to believers:

2 Corinthians 5:8–10 (NKJV) ⁸ We are confident, yes, well pleased rather to be absent from the body and to be present with the Lord. ⁹ Therefore we make it our aim, whether present or absent, to be well pleasing to Him. ¹⁰ For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that each one may receive the things done in the body, according to what he has done, whether good or bad.

Again, written to the Church:

1 Corinthians 3:11–15 (NKJV) ¹¹ For no other foundation can anyone lay than that which is laid, which is Jesus Christ. ¹² Now if anyone builds on this foundation with gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, straw, ¹³ each one's work will become clear; for the Day will declare it, because it will be revealed by fire; and the fire will test each one's work, of what sort it is. ¹⁴ If anyone's work which he has built on it endures, he will receive a reward. ¹⁵ If anyone's work is burned, he will suffer loss; but he himself will be saved, yet so as through fire.

1 Corinthians 9:24–27 (NKJV) ²⁴ Do you not know that those who run in a race all run, but one receives the prize? Run in such a way that you may obtain it. ²⁵ And everyone who competes for the prize is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a perishable crown, but we for an imperishable crown. ²⁶ Therefore I run thus: not with uncertainty. Thus I fight: not as one who beats the air. ²⁷ But I discipline my body and bring it into subjection, lest, when I have preached to others, I myself should become disqualified.

Don't show up in heaven empty-handed, with nothing to give back to Him because you used all that he gave you today, all for your own luxury. I promise you; you will regret it.

Let me ask you, if you had 25 thousand in life savings, and you went to the bank to deposit it, and right before you went to the Teller, the bank manager said I have some inside information for you, this bank is going to close the doors tomorrow bankrupt and claim all the deposits. Now you wouldn't say, well since I'm already here I might as well put it in and see what happens, you have to live for the now, no you would take the money and run to a safe deposit. Jesus said store your treasures up in heaven. Meaning that all deposits here on earth are bankrupt.

Matthew 6:19–21 (NKJV) ¹⁹ “Do not lay up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy and where thieves break in and steal; ²⁰ but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust destroys and where thieves do not break in and steal. ²¹ For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.

Be wise, invest in the things that are eternal. I'm thankful for the privilege of service, knowing that I am storing my treasures in heaven.

Outline (Thankful for Being Put into the Ministry):

1. Looking Around – seeing those with substance
2. Looking Within – seeing how full my life is compared to the emptiness of the world
3. Looking Down – seeing the tactics of the enemy so I start the day running
4. Looking Back – seeing those who I have invested in living for God

5. Looking Ahead – seeing the Judgment Seat that is to come

6.) Looking Out:

I am thankful to be in the ministry when I look out, for there are people hurting around us.

Matthew 9:37–38 (NKJV) ³⁷ Then He said to His disciples, “The harvest truly *is* plentiful, but the laborers *are* few. ³⁸ Therefore pray the Lord of the harvest to send out laborers into His harvest.”

True Story: September 28, 1985, New Orleans: A celebration party was held for the 200 public-waters lifeguards with spouses (400 total). They were being honored for the feat of nobody had drowned in the public-waters that year, for the first time in the history of the city. As they closed up the pool, they found hotel attendant Jerome Moody age 31, drowned at the bottom of the pool, in the midst of 200 lifeguards.

As they celebrated, they missed the need right behind them. Many Christians are celebrating their salvation – as we should, while they miss all the people drowning around them – dead spiritually. There are people all around us who are drowning in sin, depression and discouragement, who are ready to hear the gospel: in their neighborhood, at your work, in your school.

Paul will say to Timothy in the second letter – do the work of an evangelist:

2 Timothy 4:5–8 (NKJV) ⁵ But you be watchful in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry. ⁶ For I am already being poured out as a drink offering, and the time of my departure is at hand. ⁷ I have fought the good fight, I have finished the race, I have kept the faith. ⁸ Finally, there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will give to me on that Day, and not to me only but also to all who have loved His appearing.

If you have ever led someone to the Lord you know, there is nothing on this earth that can compare to the joyful, exhalation of leading someone to Christ. We are all capable of doing the work of the evangelist.

I meet people who tell me they want to be a missionary, the first thing I ask them is have they told their next-door neighbor. Leonard Ravenhill said, a missionary isn't someone who crosses the sea, but someone who sees the cross. He also said, don't cross the sea, if you can't cross the street.

Outline (Thankful for Being Put into the Ministry):

1. Looking Around – seeing those with substance
2. Looking Within – seeing how full my life is compared to the emptiness of the world
3. Looking Down – seeing the tactics of the enemy so I start the day running
4. Looking Back – seeing those who I have invested in living for God
5. Looking Ahead – seeing the Judgment Seat that is to come
6. Looking Out – seeing all the people that are hurting around us

7.) Looking Up

I am thankful to be in the ministry when I look Up, not to heaven, but to the Cross. When I see Jesus broken, beaten, crucified.....for me, I see real love poured out, and why.

2 Corinthians 5:14–15 (NKJV) ¹⁴ For the love of Christ compels us, because we judge thus: that if One died for all, then all died; ¹⁵ and He died for all, that those who live should live no longer for themselves, but for Him who died for them and rose again.

Why do I do this because I become more like my Jesus. As I become more like Jesus, I have to minister, it becomes my nature. I remember when I first began doing ministry, evangelizing and teaching Sunday school. People would say why do you want to do that, and I'd say because the Bible says to witness, which is true. I would say I don't want the kids to make the same mistake I made, all true. But now years later, I really don't say for this reason and that, as true as they are,

but NOW I really just finding myself doing these things naturally, because these are the things Jesus would do, and I am now becoming like him myself.

I am thankful for that. Don't grow weary of doing well, be thankful for the ministry.

Outline (Thankful for Being Put into the Ministry):

1. Looking Around – seeing those with substance
2. Looking Within – seeing how full my life is compared to the emptiness of the world
3. Looking Down – seeing the tactics of the enemy so I start the day running
4. Looking Back – seeing those who I have invested in living for God
5. Looking Ahead – seeing the Judgment Seat that is to come
6. Looking Out – seeing all the people that are hurting around us
7. Looking Up – Seeing Jesus on the Cross, and I'm becoming more like Him

As we study these next three letters, we will be more equipped for the ministry.

2 Thessalonians 3:13 (NKJV)

¹³ But as for you, brethren, do not grow weary *in* doing good.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Chapter 1

Passage: 1 Timothy 1:1-7

Title: The Church and its Message (part 1)

The Book of Timothy, written around 64-67AD. Paul the aged and experienced apostle writes to the young Pastor Timothy. Timothy traveled with Paul on his second missionary journey, and they had a special bond. Paul as we read in chapter one calls Timothy a true son in the faith.

Their bond was so close that Paul said no one else thinks so much like me than Timothy.

Philippians 2:19–20 (NKJV) ¹⁹ But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy to you shortly, that I also may be encouraged when I know your state. ²⁰ For I have no one like-minded, who will sincerely care for your state.

Paul and Timothy's story begins back in Acts 16 when Paul take him with him on his second missionary journey, and there this special father son relationship begins, and will last until Paul dies.

Acts 16:1–5 (NKJV) ¹ Then he came to Derbe and Lystra. And behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain Jewish woman who believed, but his father was Greek. ² He was well spoken of by the brethren who were at Lystra and Iconium. ³ Paul wanted to have him go on with him. And he took him and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in that region, for they all knew that his father was Greek. ⁴ And as they went through the cities, they delivered to them the decrees to keep, which were determined by the apostles and elders at Jerusalem. ⁵ So the churches were strengthened in the faith, and increased in number daily.

As Paul would establish churches and move on, we read that he would often leave Timothy behind to help those churches in their growth. As we will read this letter, we will see that although Timothy is in leadership, he still struggles with how to handle certain situations, he is still growing in his own maturity, and in leadership. I believe this book is applicable to all of us in some way or another because we are in the ministry in some form or fashion. Some teach bible Studies to adults, others are raising kids, some.....

Paul writes to Timothy so that he may know how the church is to function.

The Theme of this letter:

1 Timothy 3:14–16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

The Outline:

- The Church and its Message – Chapter 1
- The Church and its Members – Chapter 2 & 3
- The Church and its Minister – Chapter 4
- The Church and its Ministry to Itself – Chapter 5
- The Church and its Motives – Chapter 6

Paul will instruct Timothy how the church is function, but understand this, the church is both corporately, and individually. The things taught in this book are for us as a group, the church and its four walls, and for us individually, for we are the temple of God, we are the body of Christ, the sum of individuals make up the Church Body.

1 Corinthians 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?

These books (1&2 Timothy and Titus) have been called the Pastoral Epistles. For they help instruct ministers on how to serve in the ministry.

The second theme of this book, is chapter 1, verse 12:

(1 Timothy 1:12 NKJV) And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord who has enabled me, because He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry,

Being in the ministry is a gift from God, not a burden, be thankful to be called. Glean from this book so that you may be a faithful minister.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

So, First Timothy: The Church and It's Message.

(1 Timothy 1:1 NKJV) Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the commandment of God our Savior and the Lord Jesus Christ, our hope,

Here Paul says by the commandment of God, in Second Timothy 1:1, Paul said by the will of God quite a contrast. One carries the idea of "this is what I want for you", the other carries the idea of, "this is what I demand of you". I find this true in the ministry and my personal life. I enjoy the will of God in ministry when everything is going great and falling right in place, and I find myself saying Lord thank you so much for counting me worthy and placing me in the ministry, it so exciting watching and being a part of what you are doing, and just on the sidelines watching.

2 Timothy 1:1 (NKJV) ¹ Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of life which is in Christ Jesus,

However, there are many of times where I am brought to a remembrance that ministry is also a command, not a suggestion:

Matthew 28:18-20 (NKJV) ¹⁸ And Jesus came and spoke to them, saying, "All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth. ¹⁹ Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, ²⁰ teaching them to observe all things that I have commanded you; and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age." Amen.

When I grow weary of doing good, when ministry isn't going well, when things are not falling into place, when everything seems like a struggle, and I want to check-out for a while, then I am brought into the remembrance, "by the commandment of God."

The same holds true in our personal lives; when the marriage is going great, money is flowing in from employment, my classes are a breeze; it is all by the will of God and gifts from Him. But when the marriage is tough and you may feel entrapped, when the money could be better but you can't move because of family or ministry commitments, when school seems like a waste of time, then that is when you have to say, John still married by the commandment of God, John still working here by the commandment of God, and John finishing school by the commandment of God.

When I live by the command of God, then I have hope. I can say, Lord you put me here, therefore I know you are working, I can have peace in the trying times.

Paul is writing a struggling Pastor to remind him that sometimes it by the will of God, sometimes it by the commandment of God; Paul uses commandment to start this letter out, he is sending the message to Timothy and us, quitting is not an option, neither is compromise!

(1 Timothy 1:2 NKJV) To Timothy, a true son in the faith: Grace, mercy, and peace from God our Father and Jesus Christ our Lord.

Grace, mercy, and peace:

Some simple definitions:

- **Grace** – getting what you don't deserve. We deserve nothing from God, yet in His grace He pours His love out upon us,
- **Mercy** – is not getting what you deserved. Our sins sentenced us to hell, but God's love on the cross gave us eternal life.
- **Peace** – At one with God, the issue of sin and separation was dealt with on the cross, you are no longer at war with Him because your sin offended the Holy God.

These are words as they relate to our relationship with Christ, but they carry-over and apply in our inter-personal lives also. You know over and over I have been taught that this is a typical Pauline greeting, grace, mercy, and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ, but this time I really noticed different, I noticed the heart of Paul, and I desired to be the same.

You see when Paul met people, whether new or old acquaintances, the first thing he wanted to flow from him to them, was grace, mercy and peace. That when Paul met someone they would know that love was waiting for them, that they were not going to be judged, and that they would be received regardless of who they are. As soon as you met Paul, you would feel comfortable.

I say this often, but let this be the church, let us be the person, that will be the last stop. People will hear about this church or you, and say this is my last stop, my last shot, if I'm not accepted here, or not accepted by him/her, I'll never be accepted anywhere – I'll just give up on this whole religion thing.

I asked myself this, and need to ask myself this on every greeting I give someone; is grace, mercy, and peace what precedes me, and flows from me? Do people feel accepted and comfortable when they meet with me. Grace, mercy, and peace, may that always be our interface with the world and within the church.

To Timothy, a true son in the faith:

You know another thing I see here in this verse, Paul wasn't always perfect in his ministry, but love conquers all.

1 Corinthians 13:4-8 (NKJV) ⁴ Love suffers long and is kind; love does not envy; love does not parade itself, is not puffed up; ⁵ does not behave rudely, does not seek its own, is not provoked, thinks no evil; ⁶ does not rejoice in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth; ⁷ bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things. ⁸ Love never fails. But whether there are prophecies, they will fail; whether there are tongues, they will cease; whether there is knowledge, it will vanish away.

There was a beautiful special bond between Paul and Timothy, a special Father Son relationship. Paul would say of Timothy:

(1 Timothy 1:2 NKJV) To Timothy, a true son in the faith: Grace, mercy, and peace from God our Father and Jesus Christ our Lord.

(2 Timothy 1:2 NKJV) To Timothy, a beloved son: Grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

However they did have their "cutting" moment which could have altered their future relationship to be a negative one, but love conquers all.

I think it is the nature of parents to look back and say, if I might have done this differently, if only I would have done this instead, then my child wouldn't struggle with this, or fallen into that. If only I would have spent more time with them, went and played catch more, or didn't give him that.....a parent can load themselves down with guilt looking back at past failures or missed opportunities. Guess what parents, you are in some great company, with the Apostle Paul.

The Apostle Paul, the greatest Apostle, second only to Jesus in Evangelism, the great Church planter. He penned the book on how marriages should be (Ephesians), how to raise children (Ephesians), how singles should behave (1 Corinthians), the list goes on, but he made one of his worse errors, with his beloved son, Timothy.

We read the story in Acts 16:1-3:

Acts 16:1-4 (NKJV) ¹ Then he came to Derbe and Lystra. And behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain Jewish woman who believed, but his father was Greek. ² He was well spoken of by the brethren who were at Lystra and Iconium. ³ Paul wanted to have him go on with him. And he took him and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in that region, for they all knew that his father was Greek. ⁴ And as they went through the cities, they delivered to them the decrees to keep, which were determined by the apostles and elders at Jerusalem.

Ouch, what a price to pay to do missions with Paul. The sad statement in this verse is verse three, *because of the Jews*. Because Paul was worried about the Jews, he made Timothy suffer pain, Timothy was probably 15-17 years old. Paul's fear of the Jews made Timothy suffer. Paul will later teach against such foolishness in Galatians, but a little late for Timothy.

Galatians 5:5-6 (NKJV) ⁵ For we through the Spirit eagerly wait for the hope of righteousness by faith. ⁶ For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision nor uncircumcision avails anything, but faith working through love.

You know we always look at Paul as if he hit the ground running, was an instant mature minister with all the answers and how-to's, but we see here that he wasn't.

Parents, you will make mistakes, sometime in fear of doing wrong, sometimes in just not knowing any better; but you are not failures, God is not upset with you, and though you children may be upset, it will only be temporary, for love conquers all. Take your mistakes and go help someone today, find a place to share your mistakes with someone else so they won't make the same. Their kids will thank you.

Paul calls Timothy a "beloved son". Timothy never stopped loving Paul, he never stopped following Paul, love conquers all.

I, you, we also should take comfort in this in that as I grow in the ministry, I'll make mistakes, but God's love conquers all, and He will fix and heal my mistakes.

Now the rest of chapter 1, will cover the following areas in reference to "the Church and its Message"

- Stick to the Pure Doctrine of the Word (v. 3-7)
- Stick to The Law of God (v. 8-11)
- Stick to The Love of God (v. 12-17)
- Stick to The Life of Faith (v. 18-20)

1.) Stick to the Pure Doctrine of the Word (1:3-7)

Paul charges Timothy to teach no other doctrine, then the simple truths. The Message we give to the world and teach in the church has to be clear and simple.

(1 Timothy 1:3 NKJV) As I urged you when I went into Macedonia; remain in Ephesus that you may charge some that they teach no other doctrine,

(1 Timothy 1:4 NKJV) nor give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which cause disputes rather than godly edification which is in faith.

You students and teachers don't look for something new or intriguing, just stick to the simplicity of the Scriptures. Only teach what already has been taught. These guys were coming into Timothy area and teaching all kinds of bizarre things; they took fables and tried to spiritualize them into the Scriptures, they took the genealogies in the Old Testament and tried to make up some prophecy. They were trying to be clever in their teaching to prove how spiritual they were

to the people. The sad part is people then and people today are drawn to these things because they lose interest in the Word, and look for something to excite them.

Some time ago while visiting a town I use to live in, a man I met who loved the Lord, had a love for the lost, who almost daily he went out on the street to hand out tracts and witness. Well I was with some close friends of mine (visiting again) when he came walking by, so I called him over and we started to talk about the Good News, he was sharing some powerful truths about the gift of salvation. I'm saying to myself, this is awesome, he lives in the area, he will always be seeing my friends, finally someone who will always be dropping a few spiritual seeds here and there. My friends were really listening, but then, for whatever reason, he started to talk about conspiracy theories and oil for blood, and instantly he lost them, they turned from him and walked away. My heart was broken.

Gang, stay away from theories and conjectures, and stick to the solid Word of God.

2 Timothy 2:15–16 (NKJV) ¹⁵ Be diligent to present yourself approved to God, a worker who does not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. ¹⁶ But shun profane and idle babblings, for they will increase to more ungodliness.

Take the simple truths and pass them out, pass them along. You who desire to be teachers, take this note from me, give it up. Give it up on trying to find something new, clever, exciting. As the saying goes, if it is new, it is not from God.

(2 Timothy 2:2 NKJV) And the things that you have heard from me among many witnesses, commit these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also.

Take the things you hear from experienced teachers, test them against the Scriptures as told in Acts 17:11, and then go give it out. You are accountable to what you give out, so search the Scriptures and make sure what you hear is true and accurate.

(Acts 17:11 NKJV) These were more fair-minded than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness, and searched the Scriptures daily to find out whether these things were so.

You may say and think, well isn't that plagiarism, no, it is discipleship. Take the truths you have learned, and share them with your co-workers, kids, family, on the street, or the Bible Study you teach. If something reaches your heart (you can't give out what doesn't reach your heart), and testifies to the Scriptures, then give it out, add your flavor to it and make it your own.

(1 Timothy 1:5 NKJV) Now the purpose of the commandment is love from a pure heart, from a good conscience, and from sincere faith,

(1 Timothy 1:6 NKJV) from which some, having strayed, have turned aside to idle talk,

You will stray from the truth and simplicity when you stray from these:

from a pure heart - A pure heart means you have narrowed your focus on 1 thing – God. Let your focus stray onto other things and so will the truth, and you will quit living to the truth and your heart will become impure.

good conscience - Consensus asks the question: Is it popular? Conscience asks: Is it right? If you are teaching the word straight-up, living it obediently, you can rest your head on your pillow at night knowing you did the will of God, and that God is pleased with you.

from sincere faith - Faith that is real, not phony. You can read a phony Christian a mile away, they tell you their stories and excuses for doing this and doing that. Why tell excuses to other Christians, who cares what they think of you, you need to worry what God thinks of you. (FAITH) = (For-All-I-Trust-Him).

from which some, having strayed - There will always be something rising up in the church, people will argue over foolish doctrines. You just preach the Word in truth and simplicity. Stay

away from those getting into all these theories and new Christian fads, they will lead you to an impure heart.

I am reminded of the story of Deborah in Judges 4-5. She rallies the nation to fight to be set free from oppression, and all came to join the battle except four groups, (Reuben, Gilead, Asher, and Dan).

- Reuben didn't get involved. He stayed in the sheepfold, stayed where it was safe. Why? Because he gave it a lot of thought. The "paralysis of analysis" is a dangerous, yet common problem today. "Should I witness to him, or not?" we ask. "Should I go there, or not? Should I be kind to that person, or not?" And we find ourselves becoming introspective to the place where, like Reuben, we do nothing. Reuben debated so long that he missed the entire battle. Could that happen to you or me? Absolutely. God says, "I want you to do this, to experience that, to have victory here, to gain spoil there." But we sit back and analyze—and thereby miss what He has for us. Be like Ephraim, Benjamin, Manasseh, Zebulun, and Issachar. Get involved. Get engaged. Be part of what the Lord is doing as He wages war against sin and does battle for the souls of men.
- Gilead opted not to fight, saying, "It's not our turf, not our area. We're beyond the Jordan." The same is still true. A need arises, and it is the Gilead within us that says, "That's not my area of expertise. I don't feel comfortable doing that." And in so doing, we miss the battle.
- Rather than entering the battle, Dan went sailing and missed it altogether.
- Asher remained at the beach. And, along with Gilead and Dan, missed the opportunity to join the battle and share the victory.

Judges 5:15–16 (NKJV). ¹⁵ And the princes of Issachar were with Deborah; As Issachar, so was Barak Sent into the valley under his command; Among the divisions of Reuben There were great resolves of heart. ¹⁶ Why did you sit among the sheepfolds, To hear the pipings for the flocks? The divisions of Reuben have great searchings of heart.

Judges 5:17–18 (NKJV) ¹⁷ Gilead stayed beyond the Jordan, And why did Dan remain on ships? Asher continued at the seashore, And stayed by his inlets. ¹⁸ Zebulun is a people who jeopardized their lives to the point of death, Naphtali also, on the heights of the battlefield.

Judges 5:31 (NKJV) ³¹ "Thus let all Your enemies perish, O LORD! But let those who love Him be like the sun When it comes out in full strength." So the land had rest for forty years.

(1 Timothy 1:7 NKJV) desiring to be teachers of the law, understanding neither what they say nor the things which they affirm.

desiring to be teachers of the law – James says don't let many become teachers.

(James 3:1 NKJV) My brethren, let not many of you become teachers, knowing that we shall receive a stricter judgment.

As I said before, go teach, take what reaches your heart, add your flavor to it and give it out. But don't teach/share over your level, don't be afraid to say I'll get back to you on that. You young ones, if your friends are asking stuff you can't answer, then just say I don't know why don't you come with me on Sunday to church and we can ask the pastor.

True Story: A Russian woman with two kids was worried that she was going to miss her stop at Donesk, when the train conductor came around she said will you tell me when we reach my destination, I am afraid to miss it. The conductor politely obliged her. Across from her was a business man reading his paper, he said madam, don't worry, the conductor gets busy, but I know what stop it is and I will make sure you get off. So they travel some time, come to a stop, and the business man said this is your stop, so the young mother de-boards and the train rolls on. About an hour later the conductor come to the cabin, where is the young lady, and the business man rather proudly says she got off at Donesk, I helped her. The conductor said that wasn't Donesk, this is Donesk, that last stop was a stop for water and fuel, all that is back there is frozen tundra. So the they doubled back the hour, only to find the woman frozen death.

Be careful about teaching/sharing above your level, you may tell someone to get off on the wrong stop, even if you had all good intentions.

These teachers were looking at the Law, and saying well I've quit doing that and that, my my how spiritual I am. And then they would become self-righteous. They thought it was their works that made them right before the Lord.

***Ephesians 2:8-9 (NKJV)** ⁸ For by grace you have been saved through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God, ⁹ not of works, lest anyone should boast.*

***Titus 3:5-7 (NKJV)** ⁵ not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us, through the washing of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Spirit, ⁶ whom He poured out on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior, ⁷ that having been justified by His grace we should become heirs according to the hope of eternal life.*

Why does the Lord put such an importance on these things (pure heart, good conscience, sincere faith), because these are the thing God is, and desires us to be, as reflections of Him. These are the things that separate us unto Him, and apart from the world. We read in this Book (Bible) about a world that is fading, and will one day be done away with.... This world will fail! From fading to failing, this world is a bad investment. But God giving Timothy a calling, the Lord giving each of us a calling, seek first the Kingdom of God, and the life of God follows in it's fullness. All through the Word of God!

***Matthew 6:33 (NKJV)** ³³ But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you.*

***John 10:10 (NKJV)** ¹⁰ The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly.*

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

***Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV)** ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

***Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV)** ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

Passage: 1 Timothy 1:8-20

Title: The Church and its Message (part 2)

The Book of Timothy, written around 64-67AD. Paul the aged and experienced apostle writes to the young Pastor Timothy. Timothy traveled with Paul on his second missionary journey, and they had a special bond. Paul as we read in chapter one calls Timothy a true son in the faith.

Their bond was so close that Paul said no one else thinks so much like me than Timothy.

Philippians 2:19–20 (NKJV) ¹⁹ But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy to you shortly, that I also may be encouraged when I know your state. ²⁰ For I have no one like-minded, who will sincerely care for your state.

Paul and Timothy's story begins back in Acts 16 when Paul take him with him on his second missionary journey, and there this special father son relationship begins, and will last until Paul dies.

Acts 16:1–5 (NKJV) ¹ Then he came to Derbe and Lystra. And behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain Jewish woman who believed, but his father was Greek. ² He was well spoken of by the brethren who were at Lystra and Iconium. ³ Paul wanted to have him go on with him. And he took him and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in that region, for they all knew that his father was Greek. ⁴ And as they went through the cities, they delivered to them the decrees to keep, which were determined by the apostles and elders at Jerusalem. ⁵ So the churches were strengthened in the faith, and increased in number daily.

As Paul would establish churches and move on, we read that he would often leave Timothy behind to help those churches in their growth. As we will read this letter, we will see that although Timothy is in leadership, he still struggles with how to handle certain situations, he is still growing in his own maturity, and in leadership. I believe this book is applicable to all of us in some way or another because we are in the ministry in some form or fashion. Some teach bible Studies to adults, others are raising kids, some.....

Paul writes to Timothy so that he may know how the church is to function.

The Theme of this letter:

1 Timothy 3:14–16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

The Outline:

- The Church and its Message – Chapter 1
- The Church and its Members – Chapter 2 & 3
- The Church and its Minister – Chapter 4
- The Church and its Ministry to Itself – Chapter 5
- The Church and its Motives – Chapter 6

Paul will instruct Timothy how the church is function, but understand this, the church is both corporately, and individually. The things taught in this book are for us as a group, the church and its four walls, and for us individually, for we are the temple of God, we are the body of Christ, the sum of individuals make up the Church Body.

1 Corinthians 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?

These books (1&2 Timothy and Titus) have been called the Pastoral Epistles. For they help instruct ministers on how to serve in the ministry.

The second theme of this book, is chapter 1, verse 12:

(1 Timothy 1:12 NKJV) And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord who has enabled me, because He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry,

Being in the ministry is a gift from God, not a burden, be thankful to be called. Glean from this book so that you may be a faithful minister.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do His mighty work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

The Church and Its Message.

- Stick to the Pure Doctrine of the Word (v. 3-7)
- Stick to The Law of God (v. 8-11)
- Stick to The Love of God (v. 12-17)
- Stick to The Life of Faith (v. 18-20)

Recap Last Study

1 Timothy 1:3–7 (NKJV) ³ As I urged you when I went into Macedonia—remain in Ephesus that you may charge some that they teach no other doctrine, ⁴ nor give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which cause disputes rather than godly edification which is in faith. ⁵ Now the purpose of the commandment is love from a pure heart, *from* a good conscience, and *from* sincere faith, ⁶ from which some, having strayed, have turned aside to idle talk, ⁷ desiring to be teachers of the law, understanding neither what they say nor the things which they affirm.

Paul tells Timothy to stick to the pure word of God, the pure doctrine of God,

from a pure heart - A pure heart means you have narrowed your focus on 1 thing – God. Let your focus stray onto other things and so will the truth, and you will quit living to the truth and your heart will become impure.

good conscience - Consensus asks the question: Is it popular? Conscience asks: Is it right? If you are teaching the word straight-up, living it obediently, you can rest your head on your pillow at night knowing you did the will of God, and that God is pleased with you.

from sincere faith - Faith that is real, not phony. For-all-I-trust-Him

from which some, having strayed - There will always be something rising up in the church, people will argue over foolish doctrines. You just preach the Word in truth and simplicity. Stay away from those getting into all these theories and new Christian fads, they will lead you to an impure heart.

2.) Stick to The Law of God (1:8-11)

The Message we live and give cannot be apart from the law of God, and apart from the love of God. These desirous teachers used the Law to beat the sheep, not for grace, mercy, and peace. It was legalism, guilt trips, fire and brimstones. People get saved by grace and then put themselves under the Law, a bunch of rules and regulation, and then they want to put everyone else under their trip. I'd rather deal with a wretched sinner than a legalistic person any day for they will drain the life right out of you. The law is good, but it has to be applied correctly:

(1 Timothy 1:8 NKJV) But we know that the law is good if one uses it lawfully,
(1 Timothy 1:9 NKJV) knowing this: that the law is not made for a righteous person, but
for the lawless and insubordinate, for the ungodly and for sinners, for the unholy and
profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,
(1 Timothy 1:10 NKJV) for fornicators, for sodomites, for kidnappers, for liars, for
perjurers, and if there is any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine,
(1 Timothy 1:11 NKJV) according to the glorious gospel of the blessed God which was
committed to my trust.

The Law shows us our need for a Savior. The Law condemns a person for their sin against the Paul gives a listing of “guilty before the holy God”. And breaking one of them is guilty of all. No one makes it past the “liar”, so here we are all guilty before the Holy God.

(James 2:10 NKJV) For whoever shall keep the whole law, and yet stumble in one point, he is guilty of all.

Holy God, and the Law sentences a person to eternal damnation. The Law still shows wrong, guilty, even after salvation, not to condemn, but to convict. To use the law lawfully means to use it to show guilt, and the means to be forgiven of it. Then after salvation not to put people into legalism or forever-guilt, but the lamp for the pathway of walking holy before God.

Galatians 3:24–25 (NKJV) ²⁴ Therefore the law was our tutor to bring us to Christ, that we might be justified by faith. ²⁵ But after faith has come, we are no longer under a tutor.

Romans 3:20 (NKJV) ²⁰ Therefore by the deeds of the law no flesh will be justified in His sight, for by the law is the knowledge of sin.

(James 2:10 NKJV) For whoever shall keep the whole law, and yet stumble in one point, he is guilty of all.

Romans 8:1–2 (NKJV) ¹ There is therefore now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus, who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit. ² For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death.

There is a story told in Luke 16 of the rich man and the beggar named Lazarus. Some call it a parable, but nowhere does Jesus call it a parable. I see it here in the scripture as a real story. It is a reference to Ephesians 4:7-10, which is known as Abraham bosom, where people who died went before Jesus the Messiah came to take the punishment for sin (the breaking of God’s Holy Law/Word). Those who believed in the Messiah who would take away their sin, went to Abraham’s bosom and awaited the Messiah in comfort, and then after the cross would resurrect into heaven. Those who rejected the need for a savior, went to Hades (which was/is a temporary hell while they await final judgement, the Great White Throne Judgement at the end of the ages, then unto final place of torment, Lake of Fire).

Luke 16:19–31 (NKJV) ¹⁹ “There was a certain rich man who was clothed in purple and fine linen and fared sumptuously every day. ²⁰ But there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, full of sores, who was laid at his gate, ²¹ desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man’s table. Moreover the dogs came and licked his sores. ²² So it was that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels to Abraham’s bosom. The rich man also died and was buried. ²³ And being in torments in Hades, he lifted up his eyes and saw Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. ²⁴ “Then he cried and said, ‘Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.’ ²⁵ But Abraham said, ‘Son, remember that in your lifetime you received your good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things; but now he is comforted and you are tormented. ²⁶ And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, so that those who want to pass from here to you cannot, nor can those from there pass to us.’ ²⁷ “Then he said, ‘I beg you therefore, father, that you would send him to my father’s house, ²⁸ for I have five brothers, that he may testify to them, lest they also come to this place of torment.’ ²⁹ Abraham said to him, ‘They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them.’ ³⁰ And he said, ‘No, father Abraham; but if one goes to them from the dead, they will repent.’ ³¹ But he said to him, ‘If they do not hear Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one rise from the dead.’”

The key point I make in the story is that it is said/declared, verse 31 says if they do not hear Moses and the prophets. See Moses represents the Law (10 Commandments), and prophets represent the “forthtelling” of God’s Word to mankind.

The Law as said in verse (1:9) is not for the righteous person (righteous meaning “right with God”, not guilty before Him). But here is the catch, the Bible says there is none righteous, no not one (Rom 3:10-12). Contrary to today’s society ways, we are not OK, we are sinners who need a

Savior. The world calls it a disease or that was the way you were born, but the Law shows us who we really are, and that we are not OK in and of ourselves.

Romans 3:10–12 (NKJV) ¹⁰ As it is written: "There is none righteous, no, not one; ¹¹ There is none who understands; There is none who seeks after God. ¹² They have all turned aside; They have together become unprofitable; There is none who does good, no, not one."

How does a person become righteous, by letting Jesus become sin for them, taking the wrath of sin (the cross).

2 Corinthians 5:21 (NKJV) ²¹ For He made Him who knew no sin to be sin for us, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him.

1 John 1:9 (NKJV) ⁹ If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

I performed a wedding on Friday, and in it we did vows exchange, and we said..... forsaking all others. We are called the Bride of Christ, and in our marriage exchange, we make a wedding vow to Him, to forsake all others, and Paul lists some of the "all others" we are to forsake, as declared here in the Word we are to walk by:

Ephesians 5:29–32 (NKJV) ²⁹ For no one ever hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, just as the Lord does the church. ³⁰ For we are members of His body, of His flesh and of His bones. ³¹ "For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh." ³² This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the church.

Revelation 19:7–8 (NKJV) ⁷ Let us be glad and rejoice and give Him glory, for the marriage of the Lamb has come, and His wife has made herself ready." ⁸ And to her it was granted to be arrayed in fine linen, clean and bright, for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints.

1 Timothy 1:9–11 (NKJV) ⁹ knowing this: that the law is not made for a righteous person, but for the lawless and insubordinate, for the ungodly and for sinners, for the unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers, ¹⁰ for fornicators, for sodomites, for kidnappers, for liars, for perjurers, and if there is any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine, ¹¹ according to the glorious gospel of the blessed God which was committed to my trust.

Then we begin, and are, to walk by faith, and how do we walk by faith, through His Word.

2 Corinthians 5:7 (NKJV) ⁷ For we walk by faith, not by sight.

Romans 10:17 (NKJV) ¹⁷ So then faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

Verse 8, it says the law is good if one uses it lawfully, and that is true in showing the need for a Savior through the Law. But the Law is also good once we become righteous through the Savior, because the Law is still a schoolmaster teaching me, but rather than sentencing me it serves me of what is good and acceptable before the Lord, and rather than condemning me it confirms that I have been made righteous because of Him, not me.

Proverbs 4:1–2 (NKJV) ¹ Hear, my children, the instruction of a father, And give attention to know understanding; ² For I give you good doctrine: Do not forsake my law.

Psalms 119:66 (NKJV) ⁶⁶ Teach me good judgment and knowledge, For I believe Your commandments.

I am reminded of a teacher I know at the Bible College, just so gifted and taught with such power. But I remember him challenging us about the use of the Law in evangelism, and I thought wow this is surprising that he says the law is not necessary as what he is saying contradicts (Rom 3 and Gal 3). And you know what, only a handful of years later he suffered shipwreck, and I believe his disregard for the Law was one of the reasons.

3.) Stick to The Love of God (1:12-17)

The Message of the Church has to be given and lived in love. We have received this message in love, and continue to live in His love. Our God loves us, He loves you.

(1 Timothy 1:12 NKJV) And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord who has enabled me, because He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry,

(1 Timothy 1:13 NKJV) although I was formerly a blasphemer, a persecutor, and an insolent man; but I obtained mercy because I did it ignorantly in unbelief.

(1 Timothy 1:14 NKJV) And the grace of our Lord was exceedingly abundant, with faith and love which are in Christ Jesus.

God put me in the ministry either as grace or a mistake, Paul was all these, yet God still called him and used him in the ministry. You can't take a test to be in the ministry, God puts you in the ministry. Your past doesn't matter, no matter how bad or good, God will use it and work with it.

Paul is saying I was sincere when I was persecuting the Christians, I was ignorant, I was sincerely wrong. We can be like that. We can be doing things in our life that we think are totally right, yet be totally wrong. We need to sit in the quietness of the day and lift everything we are doing up to the Lord for examination, and then have that period where we sit and listen for His direction. It is so easy to ask the Lord to bless these things, but never ask Him if they are correct.

We can work 80 hours because we think the extra money is best for the family, and maybe it is, but it might just be ruining/straining your marriage, and drawing your kids away from you, and into the life of hanging out with the wrong people. Our career aspirations, even our ministries, we have to examine them and say is this what you want for me Lord.

In verse 12, Paul, he's giving a dissertation that really is a testimony. He started with the pure doctrine and reminding Timothy the need to stick to the pure doctrine, the word of God and not to get tripped up and wrapped up and taken away by all these fanciful things that people find interesting. But just to stick and declare the pure word of God. But then it's like he breaks out into a worship session, because he's remembering what God has done for him.

And he breaks out into this praise and it can be said that he's no longer teaching Timothy, but he's just praising God for a moment. And I would say the fact is that it's still both. He's giving God this great praise for rescuing him and saving him from whom he once was and all that he was. But at the same time, as he's telling Timothy of what God's done for him in his life, he's giving Timothy a promise. And he's giving Timothy instruction.

In Philippians 4:13, "I can do all things through Christ Jesus." Timothy is timid and Paul is coming with a word of power. And the word of power is what God does with people who give themselves to him and say, "Here I am, Lord. Use me. My debt of love to you is the debt of love to man. For what you've done, you've changed my heart and now my heart is yours and my heart, as it aligns with yours, your heart is for people and so here I am. Use me to reach people." And you can be that person who says but I'm not qualified in any way. Maybe you're timid and you say, "I can't be used by God. I don't have giftings and talents," and all these type of things and yet the Lord just reminds Timothy of who Paul once was. If anybody would be disqualified, it would be Paul but instead, God uses him in this great and mighty way and that's a promise to you today because you know why?

[Philippians 4:13 \(NKJV\)](#) ¹³ I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me.

It'll come down to this one thing. I can go down 10 theological, doctrinal roads but what it comes down to is God loves to take people just like you and just like me and hold them up before the world as his trophies of grace. Look what I can do in anyone's life who will simply say, "Here I am, Lord." He'll take you from wherever you are, in whatever sin you are, and you say, "Lord, be savior to me." And he will save you. Forgive you of your sins, give you eternal life and make you a son, make you a daughter. No matter where you've been, no matter what you've done.

And then for anyone and everyone, as he holds us up as trophies of grace, that he will redeem anyone and everyone that will come to him. Then he'll hold us up as trophies of grace and say, "Look what I can do in a life that's yielded to me." Because we come with the very message of God, grace. As we started last week's study, Paul opened with the words grace, mercy and peace. He doesn't just declare God's grace, mercy and peace. But Paul sends forth his whole self as when I come to you, this is how I come to you, in grace, mercy and peace. Because this is what God has turned me into, a man of grace, mercy and peace.

And Paul goes and he speaks of all these things that he once was, that no longer is, because of God's grace, mercy and peace. The trophy of grace that he is. And you know, we live in a day today that everyone loves to call out and claim out the world way and wisdom. And in the psychological world, the psychology of the world, it says once that person is, they always shall be. They're broken. This is who they should always be and it's a definition of them and it'll take a lifetime just to sustain them. Maintain them. It's never a redemption, it's never a whole new life. But Paul is taking his life and he's telling Timothy, who now is being told to all of us, the world's labels, the world's psychology may be true in this world, in the circles that will come to that philosophy. But it is absolutely not true and absolutely not the way it is and always shall be because with Christ, we are new creations. With Christ, we can do all things. With Christ, we are enabled, notice that key word in the verse, by him.

Verse 17 will say God alone is wise! Beloved don't listen to the wisdom of the world, even if it is spoken by those the world (or even church) says is wise, only to the wisdom of God as declared in the pure doctrine of the Word.

1 Timothy 1:17 (NKJV) ¹⁷ Now to the King eternal, immortal, invisible, to God who alone is wise, be honor and glory forever and ever. Amen.

We are enabled to be new creations through him and to do all things through him.

Paul says he was formerly a blasphemer. That's laying charged against God Himself, blaspheming His name, to make common, to degrade it, the Holy Holies, the King of Kings, the Creator of the universe. Imagine what Paul said about Jesus when he was chasing His people, looking to destroy them, Paul the widow maker and he's doing it in the name of religion and of course, this is what happens in any religion. Anything that comes to compete must be torn down, must be made low. Anything that would be equal or elevated then becomes a threat. Imagine all the words that Paul spoke against Jesus Christ and yet now here he is forgiven and now he takes that same tongue and he praises and proclaims Jesus and exalts Him. Precious person here today, God forgives you. God will wipe that away. God will change the old testimony into a new, powerful one of what He can do as trophies of His grace and it's all about grace and we walk in it. We live in it and we love in it and through it. Don't let anyone tell you anything less than the trophy.

Verse 13, Paul said, "Everything that I did, I did it in ignorance." That's why he obtained mercy and so there's a place that divides knowing and not knowing and the accountability comes in the knowing part, a response to the holiness of God and the command of God. Paul said, "I received mercy because God is merciful and God is gracious. When I came to the knowledge and understanding, that's when I came to the place of the knowing that I needed the Savior. Even though I did all this in the name of religion," look at what his religion did, destruction, destroying. He even makes the point that he killed mothers and women and yet he did it ignorantly and God gave him grace and mercy. You know, church, we have a place and a calling that we need to let people know the grace and mercy of God. But we also need to reveal to them of what the truth is and the commandments of God, the way that He calls a man to live. So when we present that commandment, we have to present it in the balance of a merciful and gracious God and then hold up the trophy, as you hold each other up and say, "Even me he would save."

(1 Timothy 1:15 NKJV) This is a faithful saying and worthy of all acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief.

(1 Timothy 1:16 NKJV) However, for this reason I obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might show all longsuffering, as a pattern to those who are going to believe on Him for everlasting life.

Paul is now aged in years, and he is now the Chief of sinners. You recall he went from being the least of the apostles, to the least of the saints, to now the chief of sinners.

(1 Corinthians 15:9 NKJV) For I am the least of the apostles, who am not worthy to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God.

(Ephesians 3:8 NKJV) To me, who am less than the least of all the saints, this grace was given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ,

The closer I get to the Lord, the more I see and realize His holiness and purity; and thus the more I see my impurity and wretchedness.

Jesus came into the world to save sinners

Jesus is seeking you, that one lost sheep. You may think He didn't seek you, but He did

Jesus did not come into the world to make good people better, but to save sinners.

as a pattern to those who are going to believe on Him for everlasting life.

As a pattern, a pattern to prove to other people that God will save anyone.

Pattern - hupotuposis, hoop-ot-oo'-o-sis; typification under (after), i.e. (concr.) a sketch (fig.) for imitation:--form, pattern.

We are an imitation of Christ, He is the real thing, we are just an imitation of Him. This word pattern also means "sketch", I like that. At work the engineers are making sketches (blueprints) of things we are going to build, and we use the blueprint (sketches/drawings) to make copies. We pass the blueprint down to the factory floor and say make us 1000 copies exactly to this blueprint.

That is what is being said about us, we are the blueprint, and then people see that blueprint and say yes that is what I want to be. In the context, we are all made from the original blueprint – Jesus Christ, and the copies keep getting made from there.

Put this image in your mind and will change the way you live when you realize that you are a blueprint in a sense for other copies to be made. The question and challenge is this, what types of copies are being made from your blueprint.

(1 Timothy 1:17 NKJV) Now to the King eternal, immortal, invisible, to God who alone is wise, be honor and glory forever and ever. Amen.

Paul can't contain himself and breaks out into spontaneous Praise for the God of Glory. BTW, do you realize, for how easy it is for us to forget, this is who we meet with in our morning devotion time tomorrow, who is walking among us right now!

- King – King of the Universe at that
- Eternal– word means era. Ever hear people talk about this great era, or this dominate sports team era? Well, I, we, you live in the "era" of God! That is pure power, no other era can supersede his, nor ever will!
- Immortal – means imperishable, and incorruptible. Praise God that this world and me, can't corrupt Him to change His perfection, for only His perfection can keep me perfect and made me perfect.
- Invisible – can't be seen, and praise Him for thus can't diminish Him into an image made by man... but wow how the world tries still yet. When people say things such as my god would never send someone to hell, or my god doesn't judge, to which I say maybe your god won't, but your god can't save you either for you have made up your god in your own image. The One True and Living God.... Is and does all He says in His Word.
- God alone who is wise – all true wisdom (knowledge applied) is in Him. Why go anywhere else looking for lesser wisdom when we can come to "wisdom alone".
- Honor and glory forever – God is worthy of all honor and glory forever, and it starts right here with me, and saying my life is yours, all I am, I give to You for you are worthy!

4.) Stick to The Life of Faith (1:18-20)

The Message of the Church has to be lived out in Faith by the messenger.

(1 Timothy 1:18 NKJV) This charge I commit to you, son Timothy, according to the prophecies previously made concerning you, that by them you may wage the good warfare,

I like the NIV version:

(1 Timothy 1:18 NIV) Timothy, my son, I give you this instruction in keeping with the prophecies once made about you, so that by following them you may fight the good fight,

Timothy, keep on keeping on, don't quit. Don't let God put you on a shelf, He will if that is what you want, but you will never experience His glory, kabowd, because you will be too far from where His glory shows Himself.

according to the prophecies previously made concerning you, that by them you may wage the good warfare, - Why does it seem that so many people are just meandering, never fully getting. It could be because they have never received a word of prophecy and direction from an elder personally. I know the power of the Lord, and when he shows me something about you, I tell you so that we can start to develop that in you, and increase your faith and your walk. If you ever wonder why I may seem like I am pushing you a little hard sometimes, it is because I want to see you grow in that word that God has given concerning you. I do not want you to be meandering, I want you to fulfill your calling.

**(1 Timothy 1:19 NKJV) having faith and a good conscience, which some having rejected, concerning the faith have suffered shipwreck,
(1 Timothy 1:20 NKJV) of whom are Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I delivered to Satan that they may learn not to blaspheme.**

These men left the pure doctrine of the Word of God, and suffered shipwreck. Any seafarer will attest, through your navigation equipment away, and at some point, you will hit the rocks, you will suffer shipwreck. You may be able to go for months and years, but eventually there will come a storm that you can't navigate through, and shipwreck will occur.

Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I delivered to Satan - What they did we do not know. There is a time to turn them over to Satan, it is Biblical. The hope is that after had his way with them, they would be purged. It is not a punitive punishment, but a purity one.

And as we said in the beginning, as we study this book, it's partly, even if you say, "I'm not in the ministry," you are in the church, and it's important to understand how the church is to operate. And that there's a place that pastors have to do things that are very uncomfortable. No pastor enjoys doing it. I know a lot of pastors. It's the most dreadful, period. It's a time where most pastors say, "I think I'd rather just quit and go do something easy." But then that's where you come to by the command of God, this is what God has commanded. It's not the will. When things are going well, it's easy to be, "This is the will." But when things are hard, we go, "This is the commandment of God."

And there's a place in this that people need to be addressed, corrected rebuked, and, if not willing to repent, removed. And so when you hear or see such things, people can go, "That's so heartless, I thought this was the church." Well, part of the church is to protect and part of the church is to correct. And part of the correction is so that the flesh can be destroyed. And this is what the hope is that will happen to these two men, that their flesh will be destroyed and they'll come back to the Lord.

We see this action in Corinthians when Paul told them to deliver a man from his sin. It was a wretched sin. Yet the church thought they were being gracious. They thought they were being

open-minded, and we see that today that God calls something sin yet the church feels, "Well, we want to show grace and show how gracious we are," and then they allow the sin. But you know what happens? Other people are watching. And then they enter into that sin and it propagates itself and spreads itself out. But Paul here, he's saying, "These men have to go or else their sin will propagate itself out and spread over and start infecting others."

And there's a place, as long as someone has a place in the church and has a footing and a place that they have people that they can grab their ear, then they have a place to continue on fooling themselves that what they're doing, saying, teaching is correct. And so there's a place when they're put out of the church and they're left to themselves, they'll realize just how good they had it in the ways of the Lord. And the idea is that they'll repent and return.

There's a spiritual law called reaping and sowing and there's a place that the church cannot allow the sowing of things that will reap of the flesh. And there's a place where Jesus is so clear, "A little leaven will leaven a whole lump and that whole lump will be bad."

And what we see there in Corinth is that man does repent, and Paul makes it very clear, "The correction worked and now everybody receive this man back in." And again, as we've said many times in the church, "Once you fail, you're done." And God says, "Absolutely not. We're all broken it." He can mend and heal and make whole use and restore and send forth. So he makes it clear, when someone repents, receive them back in.

Not the sweet moment I would like to end on, I like verse 17, that would be a good ending, or ending with the trophy of grace. But actually, this is a good ending church, because God has given your pastors and elders a clear "compass" on how to steer this church, your church, and He tells your leaders not to be "timid" (Timothy) but how to keep the church pure, how to navigate through this world, and have all onboard arrive at heaven's shore. So actually, that is a great way to finish, and I look forward to our weeks to come.

Timothy Chapter 1, "the Church and its Message"

- Stick to the Pure Doctrine of the Word (v. 3-7)
- Stick to The Law of God (v. 8-11)
- Stick to The Love of God (v. 12-17)
- Stick to The Life of Faith (v. 18-20)

All so we may fight the good fight, and that grace, mercy, and peace will flow from us.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV)¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV)¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Chapter 2

Passage: 1 Timothy 2:1-4

Title: The Church and its Members (part 1)

The Book of Timothy, written around 64-67AD. Paul the aged and experienced apostle writes to the young Pastor Timothy. Timothy traveled with Paul on his second missionary journey, and they had a special bond. Paul as we read in chapter one calls Timothy a true son in the faith.

Their bond was so close that Paul said no one else thinks so much like me than Timothy.

Philippians 2:19–20 (NKJV) ¹⁹ But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy to you shortly, that I also may be encouraged when I know your state. ²⁰ For I have no one like-minded, who will sincerely care for your state.

Paul and Timothy's story begins back in Acts 16 when Paul take him with him on his second missionary journey, and there this special father son relationship begins, and will last until Paul dies.

Acts 16:1–5 (NKJV) ¹ Then he came to Derbe and Lystra. And behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain Jewish woman who believed, but his father was Greek. ² He was well spoken of by the brethren who were at Lystra and Iconium. ³ Paul wanted to have him go on with him. And he took him and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in that region, for they all knew that his father was Greek. ⁴ And as they went through the cities, they delivered to them the decrees to keep, which were determined by the apostles and elders at Jerusalem. ⁵ So the churches were strengthened in the faith, and increased in number daily.

As Paul would establish churches and move on, we read that he would often leave Timothy behind to help those churches in their growth. As we will read this letter, we will see that although Timothy is in leadership, he still struggles with how to handle certain situations, he is still growing in his own maturity, and in leadership. I believe this book is applicable to all of us in some way or another because we are in the ministry in some form or fashion. Some teach bible Studies to adults, others are raising kids, some.....

Paul writes to Timothy so that he may know how the church is to function.

The Theme of this letter:

1 Timothy 3:14–16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

The Outline:

- The Church and its Message – Chapter 1
- The Church and its Members – Chapter 2 & 3
- The Church and its Minister – Chapter 4
- The Church and its Ministry to Itself – Chapter 5
- The Church and its Motives – Chapter 6

Paul will instruct Timothy how the church is function, but understand this, the church is both corporately, and individually. The things taught in this book are for us as a group, the church and its four walls, and for us individually, for we are the temple of God, we are the body of Christ, the sum of individuals make up the Church Body.

1 Corinthians 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?

These books (1&2 Timothy and Titus) have been called the Pastoral Epistles. For they help instruct ministers on how to serve in the ministry.

The second theme of this book, is chapter 1, verse 12:

(1 Timothy 1:12 NKJV) And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord who has enabled me, because He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry,

Being in the ministry is a gift from God, not a burden, be thankful to be called. Glean from this book so that you may be a faithful minister.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Chapter 2, The Church and its Members.

In this chapter will see and study the 5 things a “Christians Heart” should be.

1. The Christian Heart should be a Prayerful Heart. (v1-2)
2. The Christian Heart should be a Broken Heart. (v3-4)
3. The Christian Heart should be a Confident Heart. (v5-8)
4. The Christian Heart should be an Ordered Heart. (v9-14)
5. The Christian Heart should be a Hopeful Heart. (v15)

We start with verse 18 of chapter one for context.

(1 Timothy 1:18 NKJV) This charge I commit to you, son Timothy, according to the prophecies previously made concerning you, that by them you may wage the good warfare,

(1 Timothy 1:19 NKJV) having faith and a good conscience, which some having rejected, concerning the faith have suffered shipwreck,

(1 Timothy 1:20 NKJV) of whom are Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I delivered to Satan that they may learn not to blaspheme.

Suffered Shipwreck – these two men had quit fighting the good fight, they have left the faith. How could this happen? They eased up on the fight... and hence Paul speaks to those still in the fight, to don't let up in the fight

1 Timothy 1:18 (NKJV) ¹⁸ This charge I commit to you, son Timothy, according to the prophecies previously made concerning you, that by them you may wage the good warfare,

We can examine some hearts of the Kings of Israel.

- Saul heart, well Saul had no heart for God, he was very self-centered.
- David's heart, he had a whole heart for God, he was very servant-centered.
- Solomon was half-hearted for God for he was self-centered for God.

Yet each one started so strong, two of them strayed, and only one of them stayed.

Learn the lessons from their mistakes. Brothers and sisters are being shipwrecked yearly and it hurts and is painful to see. The carnage is ugly, it is heartbreaking. People who started off so strong, gifted, empowered, trusted, and yet ship-wrecked.

For Saul the commandments had become suggestions. When the ship wrecks, you say Lord how did I find myself here? Because you ignored the signs or just plain missed them....rocks ahead, shallow water.....

1 Samuel 13:13-14 (NKJV) ¹³ And Samuel said to Saul, "You have done foolishly. You have not kept the commandment of the LORD your God, which He commanded you. For now the LORD would have established your kingdom over Israel

forever. ¹⁴ But now your kingdom shall not continue. The LORD has sought for Himself a man after His own heart, and the LORD has commanded him to be commander over His people, because you have not kept what the LORD commanded you.”

While in Ireland we saw the most awesome cliffs above the sea. They were called the Cliffs of Moher, five-hundred feet high above the sea. We were told that despite the signs and warnings not to go outside of the railing, people do, and at least two people a year lose their footing and fall to their deaths. The signs were there, but they ignored the signs.

Again:

1 Timothy 1:18 (NKJV) ¹⁸ This charge I commit to you, son Timothy, according to the prophecies previously made concerning you, that by them you may wage the good warfare,

How do we stay in the narrow, keep the ship on course, by picking up the winds of the Holy Spirit and set a course onward.

Last Study:

Timothy Chapter 1, “The Church and its Message”

- Stick to The Pure Doctrine of the Word (v. 3-7)
- Stick to The Law of God (v. 8-11)
- Stick to The Love of God (v. 12-17)
- Stick to The Life of Faith (v. 18-20)

Chapter 2, The Church and its Members.

In this chapter will see and study the 5 things a “Christians Heart” should be.

1. The Christian Heart should be a Prayerful Heart. (v1-2)
2. The Christian Heart should be a Broken Heart. (v3-4)
3. The Christian Heart should be a Confident Heart. (v5-8)
4. The Christian Heart should be an Ordered Heart. (v9-14)
5. The Christian Heart should be a Hopeful Heart. (v15)

1.) The Christian Heart should be a Prayerful Heart (2:1-2)

(1 Timothy 2:1 NKJV) Therefore I exhort first of all that supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks be made for all men,

Supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks: These terms describe the wide categories of our communication with God.

- Supplication is simply asking for something. Prayer should never be all asking, but it should ask in bold confidence from God’s Word.
- Prayers is a broad word, referring to all communication with the Lord. Prayer to the Lord that differentiates itself from supplication and intercession are things like praising Him, just for who He is, and “waiting (where you simply ask the Lord to draw you to Himself, and confession (where you agree with your sin and failings and ask Him to forgive you and give you power to overcome), and giving of thanks (so vital to daily give thanks as it reminds you how faithful He has been, and reminds you He will be faithful today and tomorrow too because that is His very being – faithfulness – Lamentations 3:
- Intercessions refer to the requests we make on behalf of others. As we pray, there should be time when the needs of other find a place in our prayer before God’s throne.
- Giving of thanks is an essential part of our walk with God. Those who lack a basic sense of gratitude in their lives lack a basic Christian virtue.

Lamentations 3:21–26 (NKJV) ²¹ This I recall to my mind, Therefore I have hope. ²² Through the LORD’s mercies we are not consumed, Because His compassions fail not. ²³ They are new every morning; Great is Your faithfulness. ²⁴ “The LORD is my portion,” says my soul, “Therefore I hope in Him!” ²⁵ The LORD is good to those who wait for Him, To the soul who seeks Him. ²⁶ It is good that one should hope and wait quietly For the salvation of the LORD.

Prayer is the place where we “rest/wait/draw” Lamentation 3:21-26 ☺

All men: This tells us whom we are to pray for with these various means of prayer. The idea is that all men need prayer. You have never met someone that you cannot or should not pray for.

Most Christians find it easy to pray for their family, friends, and loved ones, but it should not end there. We should also pray for our enemies and for those with whom we have conflict. We should pray for those who annoy us, and for those who seem to be against us. Each of these fall into the category of all men.

To pray for all men also means to pray evangelistically. We should pray for our friends who need to know Jesus, for our coworkers, and for others we have regular contact with. To pray for all men also means to pray for your pastors, to pray for your church, and to pray for other ministries you know and love.

Giving of thanks be made for all men: We can find something to thank God for regarding all men. Even those who persecute us and are against us have a place in the over-arching plan of God.

What Paul is laying out here for the healthy church, for the healthy Christian heart, is a lifestyle of prayer.... Meaning prayer become a way of life. Continual prayer, never ceasing life of prayer:
Luke 18:1 (NKJV) ¹ Then He spoke a parable to them, that men always ought to pray and not lose heart,

1 Thessalonians 5:16-18 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Rejoice always, ¹⁷ pray without ceasing, ¹⁸ in everything give thanks; for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus for you.

Maybe you have been finding prayer boring or lacking interest – I suggest to you to pray the scriptures, take a passage, and pray over it.

- Verse 4 – Lord You say that You wish all men to be saved, Lord I too desire the same, Lord would You move in the heart of (fill in name) and draw them to You for salvation.
- Verse 6 – Lord I praise You, I thank You, that You gave Yourself ransom for me, that You bought me out of my sin, and have made me Your own, I thank You and I love You and I praise You – You are so good to me.

(1 Timothy 2:2 NKJV) for kings and all who are in authority, that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and reverence.

God would never call us into something that's vain and unprofitable. He would never have us waste our energies on something that brings no return. So there's a calling here to pray for the governing authorities, those who have authority, because God wants to do something. But do you want to change your country, you want to change your community? This is where God says, you'll do it. Hey, yeah, get out and vote. Yeah, pick up your cause. I'm not one of those pastors that says don't, but I'll surely say if that's all you do and you're not praying for them, then it will most likely be a vein exercise.

I'll tell you who you really need to pray for. Don't you ever forget this. May I never forget it because I do, that's why I'm telling you. Pray for the school board officials. Those who get elected to the school board. Because they hold the shaping of the generation that they get to have authority over. We need to pray for them that they'll make wise decisions. They'll make godly decisions.

Praying for law enforcement. They have authority. Pray for them. They need it.

How about Thanksgiving? What do we give thanks for? I'll tell you what, anything I just mentioned usually comes with long hours. And they're given long hours. And give thanks that they're willing to.

Paul, under the inspiration of Holy Spirit, he's calling the church to be the one who prays. Do you see that? We're the only one on the planet who has effective power. We think everybody who pickets or protests, or whatever it may be, has the power, and it looks like they do. But the

ultimate power God holds, as we saw in verse 17, eternal King, his era never comes to an end. We have the power to make change through this prayer, that he calls us to pray as we pray for governing authorities.

1 Timothy 1:17 (NKJV) ¹⁷ Now to the King eternal, immortal, invisible, to God who alone is wise, be honor and glory forever and ever. Amen.

Let's not miss it. Let's recognize it and see it. Who's the governing authority at this time? It's Caesar Nero. Christians are being hunted down, martyred. He's a mad man, and yet God would still say, pray for him. That's where the effect of change can come. We need to pray for who's ever in the White House, whether you voted for him or not. Because this is not just a suggestion, it's a commandment. Every word of God comes with a commandment, and the enabling to do it. Even if you say I have no heart for that person, because you know what happens in prayer, God changes your heart.

Maybe God will change your heart about the resentment that you have towards this person. Maybe God will change your heart that you'll have sympathy and sorrow for him, her, all the leaders. And say, oh, what a sad life they're living, where they're at, not respecting the word of God. The King of the universe. God will change your heart, and in changing your heart, he may show you things about your heart that will change everything. So the word pray for the governing authorities.

So that we might live peaceful and quiet lives. That's the word God in his desire for us, peaceable and quiet lives. And then we have, what would be peaceable is the ability to do what we want to do, meet and gather. That's peaceful and quiet. To fellowship, commune one with another. And this is why we need to pray for our governing authorities. That they make wise decisions. That's always my greatest prayer for them.

Two greatest prayers.

- If they don't know Jesus Christ, that they would come to know him as Lord and Savior, be broken before him, before he would ultimately break them, because their power is only temporary. His is eternal.
- And then secondly, I pray always that they could make wise decisions, be smart in accordance to making decisions that benefit the whole, even as hard as it may be, making decisions that are in accordance with the heart of God.

If you only had five minutes to do something profitable and effective, know what it is? Prayer. And for your leaders, if you only had five minutes, and I think God gives us all way more than five.

Chapter 2, The Church and its Members.

In this chapter will see and study the 5 things a "Christians Heart" should be.

1. The Christian Heart should be a Prayerful Heart. (v1-2)
2. The Christian Heart should be a Broken Heart. (v3-4)
3. The Christian Heart should be a Confident Heart. (v5-8)
4. The Christian Heart should be an Ordered Heart. (v9-14)
5. The Christian Heart should be a Hopeful Heart. (v15)

2.) The Christian Heart should be a Broken Heart (2:3-4)

(1 Timothy 2:3 NKJV) For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior, (1 Timothy 2:4 NKJV) who desires all men to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth.

Notice the heart of God for these leaders, and for every man, that all would be saved. That all would be saved. If God would have His way, as he said in Peter's Epistle, He wishes that none should perish but all should seek repentance. If God had His way, every last person would be in heaven. And then why isn't that? Because God has to give man free will. It's obvious, man has

free will, because if man doesn't have free will, then God's a liar, and this book's not true, because God wishes that all should be saved. And that's His desire for you.

2 Peter 3:9 (NKJV) ⁹ The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some count slackness, but is longsuffering toward us, not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance.

And you know what? Maybe you're saying God would never receive me. God just told you, He wants everyone to be saved. And for you to be saved, you must be born again. And to be born again, it's all up to God. He does all the work, not you. You simply receive it. There's only one kind of Christian, born again. Through the Spirit of God, as God comes and breathes into you. Literally the breath of God to give you a new life, a new spiritual life, as you're spiritually dead. Because your sin and trespasses separate you from the Holy God. What an amazing promise.

John 3:3 (NKJV) ³ Jesus answered and said to him, "Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God."

What is that breaks your heart? Once you pray you can no longer be a by-stander, prayer moves you into action. When you search you become more like Jesus, and your heart will break at the ravages of sin in both your life and those around you. Your sin will break your heart because you have again bruised the heart of God. You will not be able to stand by and watch people perish, you can't laugh with them as sex and drugs destroy their life and family. You will have to do something about it.

We see an example in the life of Nehemiah:

(Nehemiah 1:3 NKJV) And they said to me, "The survivors who are left from the captivity in the province are there in great distress and reproach. The wall of Jerusalem is also broken down, and its gates are burned with fire."

(Nehemiah 1:4 NKJV) So it was, when I heard these words, that I sat down and wept, and mourned for many days; I was fasting and praying before the God of heaven.

(Nehemiah 1:11 NKJV) "O Lord, I pray, please let Your ear be attentive to the prayer of Your servant, and to the prayer of Your servants who desire to fear Your name; and let Your servant prosper this day, I pray, and grant him mercy in the sight of this man." For I was the king's cupbearer.

(Nehemiah 2:2 NKJV) Therefore the king said to me, "Why is your face sad, since you are not sick? This is nothing but sorrow of heart." So I became dreadfully afraid,

(Nehemiah 2:3 NKJV) and said to the king, "May the king live forever! Why should my face not be sad, when the city, the place of my fathers' tombs, lies waste, and its gates are burned with fire?"

(Nehemiah 2:4 NKJV) Then the king said to me, "What do you request?" So I prayed to the God of heaven.

(Nehemiah 2:5 NKJV) And I said to the king, "If it pleases the king, and if your servant has found favor in your sight, I ask that you send me to Judah, to the city of my fathers' tombs, that I may rebuild it."

Nehemiah heard the condition of his city and couldn't stand it, something had to be done, the broken walls broke his heart, as He prayed God moved in his heart to do something about it.

He heard the conditions of the walls, and to be able to restore them he knew it would take someone who knew the proceedings of Medo-Persian government and had access to the King. Nehemiah was that man. The Lord will do that as you walk around your community. You will see things that you will be in the position of the world to change, and through prayer your heart will be put in the position to desire to do something about it.

What is that God has given you to change your world? Are you a skater? Are you asking why do I work here? Softball team, karate club, car enthusiast, arts and crafts, then use them like Nehemiah did, ask God to break your heart of the things that break His, and He will show you things inside of these things.

This is what breaks God's heart, the lost. Go for the lost. Many of you want to serve because you were lost and can't stand to see others lost. That's great, you are an imitation of the Master Blueprint Jesus Christ, who wishes that none should perish.

Chapter 2, The Church and its Members.

In this chapter will see and study the 5 things a "Christians Heart" should be.

1. The Christian Heart should be a Prayerful Heart. (v1-2)

2. The Christian Heart should be a Broken Heart. (v3-4)
3. The Christian Heart should be a Confident Heart. (v5-8)
4. The Christian Heart should be an Ordered Heart. (v9-14)
5. The Christian Heart should be a Hopeful Heart. (v15)

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV)¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do His mighty work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV)¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Passage: 1 Timothy 2:5-6

Title: The Church and its Members (part 2)

1 Timothy 2:1–8 (NKJV) ¹ Therefore I exhort first of all that supplications, prayers, intercessions, *and* giving of thanks be made for all men, ² for kings and all who are in authority, that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and reverence. ³ For this *is* good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior, ⁴ who desires all men to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth. ⁵ For *there is* one God and one Mediator between God and men, *the* Man Christ Jesus, ⁶ who gave Himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time, ⁷ for which I was appointed a preacher and an apostle—I am speaking the truth in Christ *and* not lying—a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and truth. ⁸ I desire therefore that the men pray everywhere, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting;

The Book of Timothy, written around 64-67AD. Paul the aged and experienced apostle writes to the young Pastor Timothy. Timothy traveled with Paul on his second missionary journey, and they had a special bond. Paul as we read in chapter one calls Timothy a true son in the faith.

Their bond was so close that Paul said no one else thinks so much like me than Timothy.

Philippians 2:19–20 (NKJV) ¹⁹ But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy to you shortly, that I also may be encouraged when I know your state. ²⁰ For I have no one like-minded, who will sincerely care for your state.

Paul and Timothy's story begins back in Acts 16 when Paul take him with him on his second missionary journey, and there this special father son relationship begins, and will last until Paul dies.

Acts 16:1–5 (NKJV) ¹ Then he came to Derbe and Lystra. And behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain Jewish woman who believed, but his father was Greek. ² He was well spoken of by the brethren who were at Lystra and Iconium. ³ Paul wanted to have him go on with him. And he took him and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in that region, for they all knew that his father was Greek. ⁴ And as they went through the cities, they delivered to them the decrees to keep, which were determined by the apostles and elders at Jerusalem. ⁵ So the churches were strengthened in the faith, and increased in number daily.

As Paul would establish churches and move on, we read that he would often leave Timothy behind to help those churches in their growth. As we will read this letter, we will see that although Timothy is in leadership, he still struggles with how to handle certain situations, he is still growing in his own maturity, and in leadership. I believe this book is applicable to all of us in some way or another because we are in the ministry in some form or fashion. Some teach bible Studies to adults, others are raising kids, some.....

Paul writes to Timothy so that he may know how the church is to function.

The Theme of this letter:

1 Timothy 3:14–16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

The Outline:

- The Church and its Message – Chapter 1
- The Church and its Members – Chapter 2 & 3
- The Church and its Minister – Chapter 4
- The Church and its Ministry to Itself – Chapter 5
- The Church and its Motives – Chapter 6

Paul will instruct Timothy how the church is function, but understand this, the church is both corporately, and individually. The things taught in this book are for us as a group, the church and its four walls, and for us individually, for we are the temple of God, we are the body of Christ, the sum of individuals make up the Church Body.

1 Corinthians 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?

These books (1&2 Timothy and Titus) have been called the Pastoral Epistles. For they help instruct ministers on how to serve in the ministry.

The second theme of this book, is chapter 1, verse 12:

(1 Timothy 1:12 NKJV) And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord who has enabled me, because He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry,

Being in the ministry is a gift from God, not a burden, be thankful to be called. Glean from this book so that you may be a faithful minister.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Today's Passage:

To keep us in context, Paul is telling Timothy stay to the "Pure Word of God", resist anyone who tries to "soil" that "pure" word with fables, and conspiracies, send them away (such as Hymenaeus and Alexander).

1 Timothy 1:3-7 (NKJV) ³ As I urged you when I went into Macedonia—remain in Ephesus that you may charge some that they teach no other doctrine, ⁴ nor give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which cause disputes rather than godly edification which is in faith. ⁵ Now the purpose of the commandment is love from a pure heart, from a good conscience, and from sincere faith, ⁶ from which some, having strayed, have turned aside to idle talk, ⁷ desiring to be teachers of the law, understanding neither what they say nor the things which they affirm.

1 Timothy 1:18-20 (NKJV) ¹⁸ This charge I commit to you, son Timothy, according to the prophecies previously made concerning you, that by them you may wage the good warfare, ¹⁹ having faith and a good conscience, which some having rejected, concerning the faith have suffered shipwreck, ²⁰ of whom are Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I delivered to Satan that they may learn not to blaspheme.

And as we come into chapter 2, there is a purpose of what the "Pure Word of God" can do and should do and will do, if we allow it to.

In this chapter will see and study the 5 things a "Christians Heart" should be, as shaped by the Pure Word of God:

1. The Christian Heart should be a Prayerful Heart. (v1-2)
2. The Christian Heart should be a Broken Heart. (v3-4)
3. The Christian Heart should be a Confident Heart. (v5-8)
4. The Christian Heart should be an Ordered Heart. (v9-14)
5. The Christian Heart should be a Hopeful Heart. (v15)

1 Timothy 2:3-6 (NKJV) ³ For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior, ⁴ who desires all men to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth. ⁵ For there is one God and one Mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus, ⁶ who gave Himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time,

This is a passage that every Christian must be confident of, so they can then simply rest in Him, and not their works, performance, or "am I good enough", we must be confident that we are made "good" in Him and by His perfect-finished-work on the cross!

3.) The Christian Heart should be a Confident Heart (2:5-8)

(1 Timothy 2:5 NKJV) For there is one God and one Mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus,

Verse 5 - For there is one God – there is 1 God, so for anyone, such as Jehovah Witness, Mormon, Muslim, who they say that Christianity believes in multiple gods, is wrong. They say, Christianity says there is three Gods, the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, thus they say there's three Gods. But God's right here saying there's one God, and one mediator between man and God. The Man Christ Jesus. It clearly says right here, there's only one God, not multiple gods. It is called the Trinity, 1 God in three-persons (Father, Son, and Holy Spirit).

The early church father, Augustine, said trying to explain the Trinity is like trying to pour the ocean into a bucket.

In the Old Testament, Deuteronomy 6, is known as the Shema, and it was to be cited every morning and every evening by the people of Israel. The Hebrew word translated “one” is ehad, which refers to a compound unity. Ehad is used in Genesis 2:24 with regard to Adam and Eve as well as in Exodus 26 to describe the curtains and coverings in the tabernacle. The Hebrew word translated

- “God” is Elohim, also a compound unity.
- El - is singular.
- Eli - is used for two.
- Elohim - refers to three or more.

“Hear, O Israel, the Lord your God, Elohim, is one compound unity.” Listen carefully to the Shema, and you'll hear the Trinity.

Deuteronomy 6:4 (NKJV) ⁴ “Hear, O Israel: The LORD (YAHWEH) our God (Elohim), the LORD (YAHWEH) is one (ehad)!”

Genesis 2:24 (NKJV) ²⁴ Therefore a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and they shall become one flesh.

When Jesus hung on the cross taking your sin and my sin, He doesn't cry out (El – one), nor (Elohim – compound three or more), He cries out (Eli – two); it was at that very moment, that God (Father and Spirit) are forsaking Him. I am being careful not to go too far with this interpretation, because I know there is a depth of something there regarding the Trinity that I do not fully comprehend in my finite mind, but I can clearly see (Eli – not El nor Elohim) as He is being forsaken by God as He takes in the sin of Ray Bollas.

Matthew 27:45–46 (NKJV) ⁴⁵ Now from the sixth hour until the ninth hour there was darkness over all the land. ⁴⁶ And about the ninth hour Jesus cried out with a loud voice, saying, “Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?” that is, “My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me?”

Infinite God, trying to be comprehended by finite mans-mind. Good news, if God was small enough to understand every last detail by my little finite mind, He sure wouldn't be big enough to do all I need Him to do in and for my life. We have an huge God, we have an awesome God, and we have a God of LOVE! And if

Verse 5 - and one Mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus, - I think Job can speak for all of us. He's a representation of man, especially man in despair. And he says, "I wish I could talk to God, but I can't talk to God. I need someone to go between us. I can't just enter in to talk to God." And that's what the mediator does, the go between mediates between God and man.

- But do you see a beautiful part there is that God wants to speak to man. I do say the Lord, I want to speak to you. I want to have a relationship with you.
- And then the beauty of it for our sake is, and God wants to hear from us. He wants us to speak to Him and everything we do, it's in and through Jesus Christ, therefore, it's through the cross.

And we always make the claim here is every Bible study, every prayer meeting, we're claiming that promise for us to boldly come before the throne of grace. We can come into the throne of God because the mediator has prepared a way for us. Again, what a beautiful picture, God wants

to speak to man. And the beautiful picture, man can speak to God because there's a mediator, Christ Jesus.

Job 9:32–33 (NKJV) ³² "For *He is* not a man, as I *am*, That I may answer Him, *And that we should go to court together.* ³³ Nor is there any mediator between us, *Who* may lay his hand on us both.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ *Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

There's one mediator and that's very specific for John 14:6. Jesus says, "I'm the way, the truth, and the life. No man comes to the father, except by me." There's only one way to the throne, it's through Jesus. There are no other mediators, that would include:

- Works can't mediate for you.
- Good deeds can't mediate for you.
- Mary can't mediate for you.
- A saint can't mediate for you.
- Doing some religious act can't mediate for you, or sacraments can't mediate for you.
- A priest can mediate for you.

Only one mediator between God and man, the man Christ Jesus. One who could fully touch God and one who could fully touch man. That's why He's the God-man beautiful picture of our Savior. **John 14:6 (NKJV)** ⁶ Jesus said to him, "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me.

Ephesians 2:8–9 (NKJV) ⁸ *For by grace you have been saved through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God,* ⁹ *not of works, lest anyone should boast.*

Titus 3:5–7 (NKJV) ⁵ not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us, through the washing of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Spirit, ⁶ whom He poured out on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior, ⁷ that having been justified by His grace we should become heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

This verse is freedom, have confidence in this verse, you can rest from your works, Christ has done it all. Memorize this verse; there is only one mediator between God and Man, which is Christ Jesus. There is no in-between man in a booth; there is no saint to pray to, no Mary to pray to, Jesus and Him only.

Yes man needs a mediator between him and God, because God is holy and pure, and sinful man cannot come into the presence of a holy and pure God, even Job said that:

Job 9:32–33 (NKJV) ³² "For *He is* not a man, as I *am*, That I may answer Him, *And that we should go to court together.* ³³ Nor is there any mediator between us, *Who* may lay his hand on us both.

Habakkuk 1:13 (NKJV) ¹³ *You are of purer eyes than to behold evil, And cannot look on wickedness. Why do You look on those who deal treacherously, And hold Your tongue when the wicked devours A person more righteous than he?*

Isaiah 59:1–2 (NKJV) ¹ *Behold, the LORD's hand is not shortened, That it cannot save; Nor His ear heavy, That it cannot hear.* ² *But your iniquities have separated you from your God; And your sins have hidden His face from you, So that He will not hear.*

Our church is filled with people all over the world from every kind of background and we have this one thing in common—we have experienced the cleansing power of the blood of Jesus Christ.

For some reason many in this world are not confident in the fact that through Christ they have direct access to God, because of the finished work of Christ on the Cross we can freely come before God, we need not go through another man. Let me just ask you, I imagine there is all something we want changed in this government, if you could go to the White House, would you rather talk to the President or his staffer? We get to talk to the President of the Universe. Why would you ever rob yourself of that?

When we come before God Jesus is saying he is ok, he is with me. If you go to my parents' house with me, you will automatically be received because you are with me, if you knock on their door without me, having never met them, you won't make it past the front door, the same is true

with our Heavenly Father, we are automatically received by Him because we are with His Son. You try to come to the Father with anyone else, you won't make it past the front door. No priest, politician, or family member can get you through the door.

How about Mary the mother of Jesus, to avoid dispute, even Mary went Jesus. The last spoken words of Mary were, "whatever He says to you, do it."

John 2:3–5 (NKJV) ³ And when they ran out of wine, the mother of Jesus said to Him, "They have no wine." ⁴ Jesus said to her, "Woman, what does your concern have to do with Me? My hour has not yet come." ⁵ His mother said to the servants, "Whatever He says to you, do it."

What does Jesus say? Follow me:

Matthew 16:24 (NKJV) ²⁴ Then Jesus said to His disciples, "If anyone desires to come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow Me.

John 10:27–28 (NKJV) ²⁷ My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me. ²⁸ And I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; neither shall anyone snatch them out of My hand.

We need to be confident of this, knowing that we can come into His presence at any time because of the finished work of the cross. We can stretch out our hands to Him, because He first stretched out His arms.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Verse 5 – the Man Christ Jesus - The Man Christ Jesus: This reminds us that Jesus is still human, even as He is enthroned in heaven right now. His humanity was not merely a temporary phase. When the Eternal Son, the Second Person of the Trinity, added humanity to His deity, He added it forever—not only for 33 years.

- Jesus is still fully God and fully man, but His humanity is glorified and resurrected. It is the pattern of the humanity that we will experience in heaven.

(1 Timothy 2:6 NKJV) who gave Himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time,

Verse 6 - "For all" – let us not miss that, the blood of Jesus, the sacrifice, the cross, the substitution (propitiation) is for "ALL", it is not limited atonement, it is for all who will receive it – God gave Himself for all who will come:

John 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.

And – see this church - Jesus said, "No man takes his life. He freely gives it."

John 10:17–18 (NKJV) ¹⁷ Therefore My Father loves Me, because I lay down My life that I may take it again. ¹⁸ No one takes it from Me, but I lay it down of Myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This command I have received from My Father."

Verse 6 – a ransom – The word "ransom" was a word used to buy someone off the "slave trader" block, someone who was being sold and was a slave. So, the Lord doesn't just buy us into eternal life and salvation with Him, but He bought us off the slave block as each and every one of us are/were a slave to the world, slave to sin, slave to the devil until He (Jesus) comes and buys us and takes us off that slave trader's block, and redeems us through the payment of the ransom that was due, that it was against us, that set us free.

But I like this word ransom in that it is also fitting as we look at it in our modern-day terms. What I just described was that cultural day's term of ransom, but today's term of ransom is when someone's kidnapped and they're held hostage against their will, they are taken away. And the only way to get them free is to pay a ransom that was demanded. And here, again, a beautiful picture of what Christ has done for us. We were taken hostage by sin, by the devil, by our flesh. And there was a ransom price to be paid, and it was nothing less than the precious blood of God Himself, Jesus Christ.

And He was more than willing to pay it in full. When Jesus said those words on the cross, "It is done," some translations say, "It is finished," the term there was an accounting term that literally means paid in full.

John 19:30 (NKJV) ³⁰ So when Jesus had received the sour wine, He said, "It is finished!" And bowing His head, He gave up His spirit.

There was a ledger of debt that we owed that we could not pay. And Jesus Christ comes in with one drop of His blood wipes that ledger out. As Colossians says, the handwriting that was against us has been wiped out. The ledger has been cleared. All the commandments that were broken, the 10 commandments have been wiped away, blotted out, erased, covered with the blood of Jesus Christ when He hung from the cross. You can literally translate those words, paid in full. The ransom to get those who are kidnapped, set free is what Christ has done for us. Let's give Him praise for that.

Colossians 2:13–15 (NKJV) ¹³ And you, being dead in your trespasses and the uncircumcision of your flesh, He has made alive together with Him, having forgiven you all trespasses, ¹⁴ having wiped out the handwriting of requirements that was against us, which was contrary to us. And He has taken it out of the way, having nailed it to the cross. ¹⁵ Having disarmed principalities and powers, He made a public spectacle of them, triumphing over them in it.

Your God loves you today. Your God has always loved you. And if you're here today and you've never given your life to Christ, He desires that every man, every woman be saved. That's His desire. He wants you to be His. He wants to redeem you from that slave trader's block because He wants to bring you into His house. And He's not going to make you a servant. He's going to make you a son. He's going to make you a daughter. And Zephaniah 3:17 says, "And he's going to sing over you." God sings over you. That's how much He loves you. That's how much He adores you when you come and become His. And I pray, again, if you've never done that today, that today be the day of salvation. We're told in the scriptures, in Corinthians that, "Today is the day, now is the acceptable time." So, why not today? Make it the greatest day of your life.

Zephaniah 3:17 (NKJV) ¹⁷ The LORD your God in your midst, The Mighty One, will save; He will rejoice over you with gladness, He will quiet you with His love, He will rejoice over you with singing."

2 Corinthians 6:2 (NKJV) ² For He says: "In an acceptable time I have heard you, And in the day of salvation I have helped you." Behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation.

Verse 6 - to be testified in due time –

The words, "in due time," are the translation of *kairois idiois* (καιροις ιδιοις).

- The former word speaks of "the critical, epoch-making periods fore-ordained of God when all that has been slowly, and often without observation, ripening through long ages, is mature and comes to birth in grand decisive events which constitute at once the close of one period and the commencement of another" (Trench).
- The latter word (*idiois* (ιδιοις)) means "private, unique, only of its kind." The due time would be that unique, particular season for the proclamation of the gospel based upon the historic work of Christ on the Cross. The gospel was preached all through o.t., times, but this was upon the basis of a prophetic work of salvation which was yet to be wrought out on the Cross.

I love the closing of one period, and the opening of another, as it speaks of closing out my old life, and the opening of the new life, the new man, "in Christ Jesus".

Ephesians 4:20–24 (NKJV) ²⁰ But you have not so learned Christ, ²¹ if indeed you have heard Him and have been taught by Him, as the truth is in Jesus: ²² that you put off, concerning your former conduct, the old man which grows corrupt according to the deceitful lusts, ²³ and be renewed in the spirit of your mind, ²⁴ and that you put on the new man which was created according to God, in true righteousness and holiness.

Baptism, is such a beautiful picture of the burying of the old man, and the resurrecting of a new man:

Romans 6:1–14 (NKJV) ¹ What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin that grace may abound? ² Certainly not! How shall we who died to sin live any longer in it? ³ Or do you not know that as many of us as were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into His death? ⁴ Therefore we were buried with Him through baptism into death, that just as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. ⁵ For if we have been united together in the likeness of His death, certainly we also shall be in the likeness of His resurrection, ⁶ knowing this, that our old man was crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be done away with, that we should no longer be slaves of sin. ⁷ For he who has died has been freed from sin. ⁸ Now if we died with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with

Him,⁹ knowing that Christ, having been raised from the dead, dies no more. Death no longer has dominion over Him.¹⁰ For the death that He died, He died to sin once for all; but the life that He lives, He lives to God.¹¹ Likewise you also, reckon yourselves to be dead indeed to sin, but alive to God in Christ Jesus our Lord.¹² Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal body, that you should obey it in its lusts.¹³ And do not present your members as instruments of unrighteousness to sin, but present yourselves to God as being alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness to God.¹⁴ For sin shall not have dominion over you, for you are not under law but under grace.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV)¹² *For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV)¹⁶ *Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

Passage: 1 Timothy 2:7-8

Title: The Church and its Members (part 3)

1 Timothy 2:1–7 (NKJV) ¹ Therefore I exhort first of all that supplications, prayers, intercessions, *and* giving of thanks be made for all men, ² for kings and all who are in authority, that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and reverence. ³ For this *is* good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior, ⁴ who desires all men to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth. ⁵ For *there is* one God and one Mediator between God and men, *the* Man Christ Jesus, ⁶ who gave Himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time, ⁷ for which I was appointed a preacher and an apostle—I am speaking the truth in Christ *and* not lying—a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and truth.

The Book of Timothy, written around 64-67AD. Paul the aged and experienced apostle writes to the young Pastor Timothy. Timothy traveled with Paul on his second missionary journey, and they had a special bond. Paul as we read in chapter one calls Timothy a true son in the faith.

Their bond was so close that Paul said no one else thinks so much like me than Timothy.

Philippians 2:19–20 (NKJV) ¹⁹ But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy to you shortly, that I also may be encouraged when I know your state. ²⁰ For I have no one like-minded, who will sincerely care for your state.

Paul and Timothy's story begins back in Acts 16 when Paul take him with him on his second missionary journey, and there this special father son relationship begins, and will last until Paul dies.

Acts 16:1–5 (NKJV) ¹ Then he came to Derbe and Lystra. And behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain Jewish woman who believed, but his father was Greek. ² He was well spoken of by the brethren who were at Lystra and Iconium. ³ Paul wanted to have him go on with him. And he took him and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in that region, for they all knew that his father was Greek. ⁴ And as they went through the cities, they delivered to them the decrees to keep, which were determined by the apostles and elders at Jerusalem. ⁵ So the churches were strengthened in the faith, and increased in number daily.

As Paul would establish churches and move on, we read that he would often leave Timothy behind to help those churches in their growth. As we will read this letter, we will see that although Timothy is in leadership, he still struggles with how to handle certain situations, he is still growing in his own maturity, and in leadership. I believe this book is applicable to all of us in some way or another because we are in the ministry in some form or fashion. Some teach bible Studies to adults, others are raising kids, some.....

Paul writes to Timothy so that he may know how the church is to function.

The Theme of this letter:

1 Timothy 3:14–16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

The Outline:

- The Church and its Message – Chapter 1
- The Church and its Members – Chapter 2 & 3
- The Church and its Minister – Chapter 4
- The Church and its Ministry to Itself – Chapter 5
- The Church and its Motives – Chapter 6

Paul will instruct Timothy how the church is function, but understand this, the church is both corporately, and individually. The things taught in this book are for us as a group, the church and its four walls, and for us individually, for we are the temple of God, we are the body of Christ, the sum of individuals make up the Church Body.

1 Corinthians 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?

These books (1&2 Timothy and Titus) have been called the Pastoral Epistles. For they help instruct ministers on how to serve in the ministry.

The second theme of this book, is chapter 1, verse 12:

(1 Timothy 1:12 NKJV) And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord who has enabled me, because He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry,

Being in the ministry is a gift from God, not a burden, be thankful to be called. Glean from this book so that you may be a faithful minister.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Chapter 2, The Church and its Members.

In this chapter will see and study the 5 things a “Christians Heart” should be.

1. The Christian Heart should be a Prayerful Heart. (v1-2)
2. The Christian Heart should be a Broken Heart. (v3-4)
3. The Christian Heart should be a Confident Heart. (v5-8)
4. The Christian Heart should be an Ordered Heart. (v9-14)
5. The Christian Heart should be a Hopeful Heart. (v15)

(1 Timothy 2:7 NKJV) for which I was appointed a preacher and an apostle; I am speaking the truth in Christ and not lying; a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and truth.

And look at Verse 7, Paul identifies three things that he's been appointed to be: a preacher, an apostle and a teacher.

1. A preacher warns, a preacher convinces.
2. An apostle, sent one with the authority of God, no modern day apostles, but many people with the ministry of being sent ones.
3. And then, thirdly, a teacher.

And he's making these points to Timothy in that this is the core, Timothy, that you are to exercise.

1. Preaching, evangelizing, convincing people to holiness.
2. And then, the apostle is that he has the authority to write this letter to Timothy and all pastors. And it is literally the authority of God that never ends.
3. Teaching the word of God because you never know what to do, if you've never been told what to do.

So, these things called to the church in this pastoral epistle are forever, and there is no changing to them.

I love John 5 when Jesus comes to the man who had been lame for 38 and was laying there at pool of Bethesda and Jesus said do you want to be made well. I love the other translations and how they translate it. That is the power of the Word of God, to make us whole, to make well, to make one with Him.

John 5:1–9 (NKJV) ¹ After this there was a feast of the Jews, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. ² Now there is in Jerusalem by the Sheep Gate a pool, which is called in Hebrew, Bethesda, having five porches. ³ In these lay a great multitude of sick people, blind, lame, paralyzed, waiting for the moving of the water. ⁴ For an angel went down at a certain time into the pool and stirred up the water; then whoever stepped in first, after the stirring of the water, was made well of whatever disease he had. ⁵ Now a certain man was there who had an infirmity thirty-eight years. ⁶ When Jesus saw him lying there, and knew that he already had been *in that condition* a long time, He said to him, "Do you want to be made well?" ⁷ The sick man answered Him, "Sir, I have no man to put me into the pool when the water is stirred up; but while I am coming, another steps down before me." ⁸ Jesus said to him, "Rise, take up your bed and walk." ⁹ And immediately the man was made well, took up his bed, and walked. And that day was the Sabbath.

John 5:6 (KJV 1900) ⁶ When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time in that case, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

John 5:6 (NIV) ⁶ When Jesus saw him lying there and learned that he had been in this condition for a long time, he asked him, "Do you want to get well?"

John 5:6 (Berean Study Bible) When Jesus saw him lying there and realized that he had spent a long time in this condition, He asked him, "Do you want to get well?"

Verse 7, again, he makes his declaration that his calling was to the Gentiles though he also preached and taught to Jews also. But he's making a very clear statement, literally, that the gospel is for the whole world, Jew, which are those of Judaism, the chosen who still need the Savior, the Messiah Christ Jesus. But to Gentiles, which simply meant non-Jews. It wasn't a slur by any means, it was just non-Jew. So, the statement that he's making is this offer is to the whole world. And it declares, "For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten son. And whoever should believe in Him shall not perish, but have everlasting life." You know, God loves you. And those who live here in this county, in this state, in this country, on this continent, and the world. Every last person in the Middle East, God loves. God's not a hater against people the world, this country may say should be despised, God loves them. And He wishes that all should be saved. And He extends his son and the offer to every last person come, and you shall be received.

John 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.

At this point in Paul's ministry, he's near the ending of his ministry, more so than the beginning of his ministry. And he's making the clear point he spent his whole life preaching to the Gentiles, and many of them came to salvation. And the declaration, therefore, is there's none that are too far from God. And there's none who are out of His reach of His love. And we go all the way back to the beginning of this passage, we ought to pray always. And then, our next verse, without doubting, without wrath, praying for a judgment, but with love, praying for salvation. The world would say, "Write those Gentiles off. Write those non-believers off." And yet Paul says, "Look, what's happened when the gospel's gone forth to the whole world. The Gentiles believe because they received the good news."

And here in Verse 8, Paul says, as we begin this passage on the order of the church and how it is to be handled, but Verse 8, he says, "One thing men should be known for in the church is men of prayer. That's what God speaks to you to be known men as men of prayer. And therefore the only way to be known as a man of prayer is to pray."

(1 Timothy 2:8 NKJV) I desire therefore that the men pray everywhere, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting;

Verse 8-15 is in the context of corporate, community, gathering of the church.

Verse 8 - I desire men pray - The word for men is the exclusive word for males; we will see in our next study that it is not saying that woman can't pray in the corporate setting, but what is being said here is that God "desires" men to be men of prayer at the church. But, again I do not see this necessarily as saying that their prayers have to be "audible", but that they are to be men of prayer is the point, everywhere they go for that matter.

Verse 8, again, lifting up holy hands, I don't necessarily think this is a commandment to lift up hands as prayer is not a body positional thing, but a whole body positional thing. And what I mean by that is when we pray, we should be giving ourselves totally and completely. And it's easy to pray and be detached. And so, what we have here is a calling to be fully engaged in prayer, not an exercise of a ritual, but an actual engagement of our whole being, body, spirit, and soul. The hands lifted up, universally across the world, an act of surrender. And here, again, a surrendering to we can't. In and of ourselves, we have no power to do anything, but God and His invitation to relationship and intimacy, we surrender to Him our lives saying, "Lord, you can do all things. And I surrender my abilities and my actions, they always fall so short. And I can lift my hands in surrender and say, Father, do it, take it. You can do all things. And with You, all things are possible." And it's just like a child lifting their hands to the father that's coming that says, "Lift me up, hold me, Mom. Hold me, Dad. Draw me. I want to be held by you." It's just a beautiful place that we see here.

Romans 12:1-2 (NKJV) ¹ I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. ² And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.

Prayer should be fully engaged, wholly engaged, and then ought always to pray. And I want that to be a remembrance. And we'll be starting our next study with this verse as we talk about women's roles in the church. Before there would be any critique against that, or challenge, every man has to evaluate himself first and say, "Am I a man of prayer in this church? Do I lift up holy hands on behalf of the calling that God has given me as a man to lift up holy hands."

And three requirements that are put on these men who were to pray in the church. And the first one is holy hands. The men need to be holy. The word holy doesn't mean perfect when regarding us. It means to be set apart. It means to be uncommon. And there's a place that a man can't be living in one way in the world, and then come into the church and present another way. Holy, set apart. And so, there's a place in prayer always of confession of 1 John 1:9, "If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness." That's not a verse for salvation. It's a verse for relation as we are saved and set apart by the Lord. But then, we have a relationship with Him and we need to be right in that relationship with Him. *1 John 1:9-10 (NKJV)* ⁹ If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. ¹⁰ If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His word is not in us.

And if we've sinned against Him and His holy commandments, we need to repent and cleanse our way so that we can come before Him. And there's nothing that is between us, such as a personal unrepentant sin. If you have sin against a brother, leave your gift at the altar, go run to the brother and try to reconcile with the brother. Because, as we said if at all possible, live peaceably with one another. And if not, then you've done your service and you can come before the Lord. But holy hands, uncommon living. And living like this world is not it. Living unlike this world is totally uncommon.

Matthew 5:23-24 (NKJV) ²³ Therefore if you bring your gift to the altar, and there remember that your brother has something against you, ²⁴ leave your gift there before the altar, and go your way. First be reconciled to your brother, and then come and offer your gift.

Romans 12:18 (NKJV) ¹⁸ If it is possible, as much as depends on you, live peaceably with all men.

Verse 8 - Without wrath would mean that, of course, we can't have this harbored resentment that God's going to say, again, "Leave your gift at the altar." But our brother, Peter in his epistle us, "Men, that husbands, if you have a harshness towards your wife it's going to hinder your prayers." And I think that's probably one of the greatest areas that there can be, these contentions in the home that stifle, a prayer because God would be saying, "Yeah that's great, I love hearing from ya." I can appreciate you wanting to talk about foreign missions, and save the world, and a watchman on the wall, and all these types of things that men can say. But God will be like, "What are ya doin' with the bride that I gave you? Are you loving her as Christ loved the church? Are you washing her with the Word? Are you dying to yourself that she might see Christ in you and be drawn to Christ, and that there can be sweetness in your home that she can have rest knowing

that she's loved by you?" And all these type of things, I think marriage is one of the greatest hindrance to a prayer life when people start storing up resentment or distancing themselves. **1 Peter 3:7 (NKJV)** ⁷ Husbands, likewise, dwell with *them* with understanding, giving honor to the wife, as to the weaker vessel, and as *being* heirs together of the grace of life, that your prayers may not be hindered.

Verse 8 – Without Doubting Then verse eight goes on to say that the prayers should be without doubting. God makes a command here to the men of prayer to be men of faith. We talked about that last week as we were closing out chapter one. Stick to the life of faith, believing that God is who he says that he is, and God will do what he says he will do. Verse 1:17, so important to remember who he is, and then just claiming and believing that God can do anything. **1 Timothy 1:17 (NKJV)** ¹⁷ Now to the King eternal, immortal, invisible, to God who alone is wise, *be* honor and glory forever and ever. Amen.

It's so sad that so many prayers are prayed in man's logic. There's no need to pray if we're going to pray in logic; because in our logic, we'll figure out what to do and how to do it. But it will always fall short of what God will do and God is able to do. There's nothing wrong with praying for miracles. I think the church has lost its place in praying for miracles.

God is the same yesterday, today, and forever. There's a movement that continually goes with. It's called cessationist, and they believe that the gifts of God have ceased, that God's miracles have ceased, or that man can request miracles. Maybe God might do a miracle, but it's up to God. It's not for man to request. It's called cessationist. This is a sad place to be, I'll say, because now they put God in a box. You know what? A god in a box can't do anything for me. **Hebrews 13:8 (NKJV)** ⁸ Jesus Christ *is* the same yesterday, today, and forever.

When I pray, I believe that God will do the impossible; and therefore, I can pray for the impossible. I can pray that God would do a miracle in this person's life, that I can pray that God will do a miracle in my marriage, that God will do a miracle in my family, that God will do a miracle in a healing. Then I have faith, and then I can live in the hope. Because you know what faith brings? It brings hope, that I'm not hopeless, and I'm not committed to being stuck in this situation. Yes, there's always a place that I say, "Let thy will be done." But by faith, I ask. Doesn't mean that I name it and claim it. But by faith, I ask, believing that should God choose, he will do what I ask him to do.

That's a great, great honor to God. I believe it blesses him. That he goes, "Wow, you actually believe that I can do that. You actually believe that I'd be willing to do that." How that must move his heart when the church prays by faith, that, "God, you can do big things; and therefore, I'll ask you to do big things because I believe you're a big God."

When David fought his giant, he went in power, not weakness. He knows God was more than able to deliver his foe. **1 Samuel 17:43–47 (NKJV)** ⁴³ So the Philistine said to David, "Am I a dog, that you come to me with sticks?" And the Philistine cursed David by his gods. ⁴⁴ And the Philistine said to David, "Come to me, and I will give your flesh to the birds of the air and the beasts of the field!" ⁴⁵ Then David said to the Philistine, "You come to me with a sword, with a spear, and with a javelin. But I come to you in the name of the LORD of hosts, the God of the armies of Israel, whom you have defied. ⁴⁶ This day the LORD will deliver you into my hand, and I will strike you and take your head from you. And this day I will give the carcasses of the camp of the Philistines to the birds of the air and the wild beasts of the earth, that all the earth may know that there is a God in Israel. ⁴⁷ Then all this assembly shall know that the LORD does not save with sword and spear; for the battle is the LORD's, and He will give you into our hands."

He didn't say ok Goliath, stand still there, I'm gona try this, hope this works, here we go, this one is for the Lord. No, David said hey Goliath, guess what, today you're a dead man. **Psalms 65:5–6 (NKJV)** ⁵ By awesome deeds in righteousness You will answer us, O God of our salvation, *You who are* the confidence of all the ends of the earth, And of the far-off seas; ⁶ Who established the mountains by His strength, *Being* clothed with power;

Devil Sends His Champion Against You

Notice the devil sends his champion, he picks who can wage the best battle against you, he comes to battle the place he knows is weak (fear, pride, addiction, lust, anger, money, family, security) and he says this is my best, and the best way to defeat you.

1 Samuel 17:1–4 (NKJV) ¹ Now the Philistines gathered their armies together to battle, and were gathered at Sochoh, which belongs to Judah; they encamped between Sochoh and Azekah, in Ephes Dammim. ² And Saul and the men of Israel were gathered together, and they encamped in the Valley of Elah, and drew up in battle array against the Philistines. ³ The Philistines stood on a mountain on one side, and Israel stood on a mountain on the other side, with a valley between them. ⁴ And a champion went out from the camp of the Philistines, named Goliath, from Gath, whose height was six cubits and a span.

Devil Knows your Name (and You are God's Servant)

The devil, as the Philistines enemy, knew Saul by name, and the whole army he calls servants of Saul. Just as Peter would say, why are you surprised by this fiery trial that is come upon you. It is because the devil knows who you are

1 Samuel 17:5–8 (NKJV) ⁵ He had a bronze helmet on his head, and he was armed with a coat of mail, and the weight of the coat was five thousand shekels of bronze. ⁶ And he had bronze armor on his legs and a bronze javelin between his shoulders. ⁷ Now the shaft of his spear was like a weaver's beam, and his iron spearhead weighed six hundred shekels; and a shield-bearer went before him. ⁸ Then he stood and cried out to the armies of Israel, and said to them, "Why have you come out to line up for battle? Am I not a Philistine, and you the servants of Saul? Choose a man for yourselves, and let him come down to me.

1 Peter 4:12–14 (NKJV)

¹² Beloved, do not think it strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened to you; ¹³ but rejoice to the extent that you partake of Christ's sufferings, that when His glory is revealed, you may also be glad with exceeding joy. ¹⁴ If you are reproached for the name of Christ, blessed are you, for the Spirit of glory and of God rests upon you. On their part He is blasphemed, but on your part He is glorified.

War is a Team Activity / Don't Allow Devil to Set the Terms of the Battle

War is a team activity; it is not one-on-one. But Israel falls for it, they allow the devil to set the terms of the battle. Imagine if Israel sent 5 men to fight Goliath? Philistines would say he that is not fair, that isn't right. My point, is the devil knows your name, he sends his champion to fight you, he has studied your weakness, and he wants to set the terms of the fight, and too often Christians allow the devil to set the terms, and agree to the battle on the devil's term, just as Saul did with the Philistines.

1 Samuel 17:8–11 (NKJV) ⁸ Then he stood and cried out to the armies of Israel, and said to them, "Why have you come out to line up for battle? Am I not a Philistine, and you the servants of Saul? Choose a man for yourselves, and let him come down to me. ⁹ If he is able to fight with me and kill me, then we will be your servants. But if I prevail against him and kill him, then you shall be our servants and serve us." ¹⁰ And the Philistine said, "I defy the armies of Israel this day; give me a man, that we may fight together." ¹¹ When Saul and all Israel heard these words of the Philistine, they were dismayed and greatly afraid.

Other's Buy the Devil's Narrative

In verse 25, all the army of Israel, along with Saul, bought into the narrative the enemy had established. They think this is the way it should be because the enemy said it to be so. Way too many Christians and churches are buying into the narrative the enemy, the devil, the world says how it is to be. Thus, God is looking for a man/woman to stand in the gap and fight this lie, and narrative, to rally an army to fight.

1 Samuel 17:23–25 (NKJV) ²³ Then as he talked with them, there was the champion, the Philistine of Gath, Goliath by name, coming up from the armies of the Philistines; and he spoke according to the same words. So David heard them. ²⁴ And all the men of Israel, when they saw the man, fled from him and were dreadfully afraid. ²⁵ So the men of Israel said, "Have you seen this man who has come up? Surely he has come up to defy Israel; and it shall be that the man who kills him the king will enrich with great riches, will give him his daughter, and give his father's house exemption from taxes in Israel."

Ezekiel 22:30–31 (NKJV) ³⁰ So I sought for a man among them who would make a wall, and stand in the gap before Me on behalf of the land, that I should not destroy it; but I found no one. ³¹ Therefore I have poured out My indignation on them; I have consumed them with the fire of My wrath; and I have recompensed their deeds on their own heads," says the Lord GOD.

1 Samuel 13:14 (NKJV) ¹⁴ But now your kingdom shall not continue. The LORD has sought for Himself a man after His own heart, and the LORD has commanded him to be commander over His people, because you have not kept what the LORD commanded you."

Other Christians Seem Wise – but are Really Fearful

David sees 1 man is defeating the while army of God, the Living God, who is alive and lives forevermore! And David's brothers want to come and seem so wise, and spiritual, but the fact is they are simply fearful. And so too today, many Christians want to come with all their logic, and countering, and reasoning, and justification, but the fact is they are simply fearful to fight, they are fearful to get messy, they are fearful to leave their comfort zone.

1 Samuel 17:26–30 (NKJV) ²⁶ Then David spoke to the men who stood by him, saying, "What shall be done for the man who kills this Philistine and takes away the reproach from Israel? For who is this uncircumcised Philistine, that he should defy the armies of the living God?" ²⁷ And the people answered him in this manner, saying, "So shall it be done for the man who kills him." ²⁸ Now Eliab his oldest brother heard when he spoke to the men; and Eliab's anger was aroused against David, and he said, "Why did you come down here? And with whom have you left those few sheep in the wilderness? I know your pride and the insolence of your heart, for you have come down to see the battle." ²⁹ And David said, "What have I done now? Is there not a cause?" ³⁰ Then he turned from him toward another and said the same thing; and these people answered him as the first ones did.

God Sees the Heart

Saul says you cant fight him for he is a man of war, and you are just a kid. Yet back when David was picked to play the harp for Saul to bring him peace in the midst of his distress, when asked who David, they described David as a man of war, but he had yet to fight a war (yes bears and lions - but war). War, was in the heart of David, and it was seen by others.

1 Samuel 17:31–33 (NKJV) ³¹ Now when the words which David spoke were heard, they reported them to Saul; and he sent for him. ³² Then David said to Saul, "Let no man's heart fail because of him; your servant will go and fight with this Philistine." ³³ And Saul said to David, "You are not able to go against this Philistine to fight with him; for you are a youth, and he a man of war from his youth."

1 Samuel 16:18 (NKJV) ¹⁸ Then one of the servants answered and said, "Look, I have seen a son of Jesse the Bethlehemite, who is skillful in playing, a mighty man of valor, a man of war, prudent in speech, and a handsome person; and the LORD is with him."

David Runs to the Battle – May we do the Same (Close Quarter Fighting)

And where we started, David comes to the battle without doubting, the battle belongs to the Lord..... that the Lord wants to do something about "something"; God is not into defeat of His people. I love it that David came into the battle with a staff. You know what a staff was for, it was for close-quarter fighting. David was ready to go toe-to-toe with the Giant. That is a man after God's heart, as he fought for God's honor and glory. So I ask myself, and I ask you, what is it in your life that needs defeated to bring God glory, to honor God? How about that person? Will you fight for them, so to bring a victory into their life, so God will be honored, God will be glorified? And notice David, ran, rushed, to the fight, it wasn't when convenient, it was when the enemy appeared.

1 Samuel 17:40–48 (NKJV) ⁴⁰ Then he took his staff in his hand; and he chose for himself five smooth stones from the brook, and put them in a shepherd's bag, in a pouch which he had, and his sling was in his hand. And he drew near to the Philistine. ⁴¹ So the Philistine came, and began drawing near to David, and the man who bore the shield went before him. ⁴² And when the Philistine looked about and saw David, he disdained him; for he was *only* a youth, ruddy and good-looking. ⁴³ So the Philistine said to David, "Am I a dog, that you come to me with sticks?" And the Philistine cursed David by his gods. ⁴⁴ And the Philistine said to David, "Come to me, and I will give your flesh to the birds of the air and the beasts of the field!" ⁴⁵ Then David said to the Philistine, "You come to me with a sword, with a spear, and with a javelin. But I come to you in the name of the LORD of hosts, the God of the armies of Israel, whom you have defied. ⁴⁶ This day the LORD will deliver you into my hand, and I will strike you and take your head from you. And this day I will give the carcasses of the camp of the Philistines to the birds of the air and the wild beasts of the earth, that all the earth may know that there is a God in Israel. ⁴⁷ Then all this assembly shall know that the LORD does not save with sword and spear; for the battle is the LORD's, and He will give you into our hands." ⁴⁸ So it was, when the Philistine arose and came and drew near to meet David, that David hurried and ran toward the army to meet the Philistine.

The Prayers of the Few Will Secure the Blessings of the Many

One man David, filled with faith and not doubting, brings a victory to a whole army, a whole nation. And Christian don't look around at who is praying, who is entering into the battle, you simply come believing the battle belongs to the Lord, the prayers of the few will secure the blessings of the multitude,

1 Samuel 17:49–54 (NKJV) ⁴⁹ Then David put his hand in his bag and took out a stone; and he slung it and struck the Philistine in his forehead, so that the stone sank into his forehead, and he fell on his face to the earth. ⁵⁰ So David prevailed over the Philistine with a sling and a stone, and struck the Philistine and killed him. But there was no sword in the hand of David. ⁵¹ Therefore David ran and stood over the Philistine, took his sword and drew it out of its sheath and killed him, and cut off his head with it. And when the Philistines saw that their champion was dead, they fled. ⁵² Now the

men of Israel and Judah arose and shouted, and pursued the Philistines as far as the entrance of the valley and to the gates of Ekron. And the wounded of the Philistines fell along the road to Shaaraim, even as far as Gath and Ekron. ⁵³ Then the children of Israel returned from chasing the Philistines, and they plundered their tents. ⁵⁴ And David took the head of the Philistine and brought it to Jerusalem, but he put his armor in his tent.

When we pray, intercede, come in confidence with no doubting, knowing that God is more than able to do all that ask.

Ephesians 3:20-21 (NKJV) ²⁰ Now to Him who is able to do exceedingly abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that works in us, ²¹ to Him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus to all generations, forever and ever. Amen.

Ezekiel 37 – Dry Bones to Life

I find it ever so interesting, the prophesy of dry bones coming to life in Ezekiel 37. It doesn't say where the valley is, but when you read the account of 1 Samuel 17, everything has a beautiful parallel between Ezekiel 37, and 1 Samuel 17. Yes we don't know where the valley is prophesied in Ezekiel 37 that is for sure, but I do know this, if you want to fresh power in your life, fresh wind, fresh move of the Spirit, if you want dry bones to come to life, you will find it and receive it in the place of prayer (without doubting), just as we have read it today.

Ezekiel 37:1 (NKJV) ¹ The hand of the LORD came upon me and brought me out in the Spirit of the LORD, and set me down in the midst of the valley; and it was full of bones.

Ezekiel 37:2-3 (NKJV) ² Then He caused me to pass by them all around, and behold, there were very many in the open valley; and indeed they were very dry. ³ And He said to me, "Son of man, can these bones live?" So I answered, "O Lord GOD, You know."

Ezekiel 37:4-14 (NKJV) ⁴ Again He said to me, "Prophesy to these bones, and say to them, 'O dry bones, hear the word of the LORD!' ⁵ Thus says the Lord GOD to these bones: "Surely I will cause breath to enter into you, and you shall live. ⁶ I will put sinews on you and bring flesh upon you, cover you with skin and put breath in you; and you shall live. Then you shall know that I am the LORD." ' ' ⁷ So I prophesied as I was commanded; and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and suddenly a rattling; and the bones came together, bone to bone. ⁸ Indeed, as I looked, the sinews and the flesh came upon them, and the skin covered them over; but there was no breath in them. ⁹ Also He said to me, "Prophesy to the breath, prophesy, son of man, and say to the breath, 'Thus says the Lord GOD: "Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe on these slain, that they may live." ' ' ¹⁰ So I prophesied as He commanded me, and breath came into them, and they lived, and stood upon their feet, an exceedingly great army. ¹¹ Then He said to me, "Son of man, these bones are the whole house of Israel. They indeed say, 'Our bones are dry, our hope is lost, and we ourselves are cut off!' ¹² Therefore prophesy and say to them, 'Thus says the Lord GOD: "Behold, O My people, I will open your graves and cause you to come up from your graves, and bring you into the land of Israel. ¹³ Then you shall know that I am the LORD, when I have opened your graves, O My people, and brought you up from your graves. ¹⁴ I will put My Spirit in you, and you shall live, and I will place you in your own land. Then you shall know that I, the LORD, have spoken it and performed it," says the LORD.' "

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Passage: 1 Timothy 2:9-15
Title: Woman and Public Worship

1 Timothy 2:8–15 (NKJV) ⁸ I desire therefore that the men pray everywhere, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting; ⁹ in like manner also, that the women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with propriety and moderation, not with braided hair or gold or pearls or costly clothing, ¹⁰ but, which is proper for women professing godliness, with good works. ¹¹ Let a woman learn in silence with all submission. ¹² And I do not permit a woman to teach or to have authority over a man, but to be in silence. ¹³ For Adam was formed first, then Eve. ¹⁴ And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived, fell into transgression. ¹⁵ Nevertheless she will be saved in childbearing if they continue in faith, love, and holiness, with self-control.

The Book of Timothy, written around 64-67AD. Paul the aged and experienced apostle writes to the young Pastor Timothy. Timothy traveled with Paul on his second missionary journey, and they had a special bond. Paul as we read in chapter one calls Timothy a true son in the faith.

Their bond was so close that Paul said no one else thinks so much like me than Timothy. **Philippians 2:19–20 (NKJV)** ¹⁹ But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy to you shortly, that I also may be encouraged when I know your state. ²⁰ For I have no one like-minded, who will sincerely care for your state.

Paul and Timothy's story begins back in Acts 16 when Paul take him with him on his second missionary journey, and there this special father son relationship begins, and will last until Paul dies.

Acts 16:1–5 (NKJV) ¹ Then he came to Derbe and Lystra. And behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain Jewish woman who believed, but his father was Greek. ² He was well spoken of by the brethren who were at Lystra and Iconium. ³ Paul wanted to have him go on with him. And he took him and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in that region, for they all knew that his father was Greek. ⁴ And as they went through the cities, they delivered to them the decrees to keep, which were determined by the apostles and elders at Jerusalem. ⁵ So the churches were strengthened in the faith, and increased in number daily.

As Paul would establish churches and move on, we read that he would often leave Timothy behind to help those churches in their growth. As we will read this letter, we will see that although Timothy is in leadership, he still struggles with how to handle certain situations, he is still growing in his own maturity, and in leadership. I believe this book is applicable to all of us in some way or another because we are in the ministry in some form or fashion. Some teach bible Studies to adults, others are raising kids, some.....

Paul writes to Timothy so that he may know how the church is to function.

The Theme of this letter:

1 Timothy 3:14–16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

The Outline:

- The Church and its Message – Chapter 1
- The Church and its Members – Chapter 2 & 3
- The Church and its Minister – Chapter 4
- The Church and its Ministry to Itself – Chapter 5
- The Church and its Motives – Chapter 6

Paul will instruct Timothy how the church is function, but understand this, the church is both corporately, and individually. The things taught in this book are for us as a group, the church and

its four walls, and for us individually, for we are the temple of God, we are the body of Christ, the sum of individuals make up the whole Church Body.

1 Corinthians 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?

These books (1&2 Timothy and Titus) have been called the Pastoral Epistles. For they help instruct ministers on how to serve in the ministry.

The second theme of this book, is chapter 1, verse 12:

(1 Timothy 1:12 NKJV) And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord who has enabled me, because He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry,

Being in the ministry is a gift from God, not a burden, be thankful to be called. Glean from this book so that you may be a faithful minister.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Chapter 2, The Church and its Members.

In this chapter will see and study the 5 things a "Christians Heart" should be.

1. The Christian Heart should be a Prayerful Heart. (v1-2)
2. The Christian Heart should be a Broken Heart. (v3-4)
3. The Christian Heart should be a Confident Heart. (v5-8)
4. The Christian Heart should be an Ordered Heart. (v9-14)
5. The Christian Heart should be a Hopeful Heart. (v15)

In our passage today, verses 2:9-15, (Title: Woman and Public Worship), What is the role of woman in the church, what roles can they fill, and what roles the cannot? A topic that is often misunderstood and misapplied, and often contentious within the church. Let us start with the remembrance, in every word, command, will, and way of the Lord for His Church and People, is to Protect and Provide. So as we study, what is becoming a contentious and even divisive passage in the Church today, that God's Word is perfect, and what He says is perfect, and perfect for us in this fallen world.

Proverbs 30:5-6 (NKJV) ⁵ Every word of God is pure; He is a shield to those who put their trust in Him. ⁶ Do not add to His words, Lest He rebuke you, and you be found a liar.

Psalms 18:30 (NKJV) ³⁰ As for God, His way is perfect; The word of the LORD is proven; He is a shield to all who trust in Him.

Revelation 22:18-20 (NKJV) ¹⁸ For I testify to everyone who hears the words of the prophecy of this book: If anyone adds to these things, God will add to him the plagues that are written in this book; ¹⁹ and if anyone takes away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part from the Book of Life, from the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book. ²⁰ He who testifies to these things says, "Surely I am coming quickly." Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus!

4.) The Christian Heart should be an Ordered Heart (2:9-14)

God establishes order in His Church.. Here we have order in the family, and order in the church. You have to maintain priority of doing what matters most. Loss of order will cause you to stray from a pure heart.

1 Timothy 1:5 (NKJV) ⁵ Now the purpose of the commandment is love from a pure heart, from a good conscience, and from sincere faith,

(1 Timothy 2:8 NKJV) I desire therefore that the men pray everywhere, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting;

Paul has been talking about “all men,” but “all men” come in two varieties - male and female. And now in the last half of Chapter 2, Paul is going to instruct both men and women regarding the specific roles each should play in church life. Our gender matters to God. He begins in verse 8, “I desire therefore that the men pray everywhere...” I’m sure Paul wants women to pray, but here he makes special mention of the men. Men are called to lead, and good leaders pray.

(1 Timothy 2:9 NKJV) in like manner also, that the women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with propriety and moderation, not with braided hair or gold or pearls or costly clothing,

(1 Timothy 2:10 NKJV) but, which is proper for women professing godliness, with good works.

It says modest apparel, it doesn’t say homely apparel, it doesn’t say no make-up.

- Modestly means proper – and the next two words help define what is proper:
 - Propriety means “with regards to others”
 - Moderation means “with self-control”, in moderation, not excessive, nor deficient, middle ground.

In verse 8 as referring to men it was said “I desire”, this is God’s desire for men, to be men of prayer. In verse 9 it starts with, “in like manner also, and thus is what is desired for woman... and it speaks of modesty.

Again, the setting is in the church, a corporate gathering setting. Paul under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit is saying in the church, one of the things men should be known as, are men of prayer. And woman, should be known for modesty, and verse 10, godliness and good works.

You have to maintain priority of doing what matters most. Loss of order will cause you to stray from a pure heart. We live in a sensual soaked world, and the focus is continually on the outward appearance, yet we have the highest all-time rate of inward depression (and I don’t mean “clinical” depression – just people feeling empty, sad, hopeless and the likes). This applies even among the Christian women. When a Christian woman tries to live up to this world, the constant outward appearance, the outer-man, it comes at the cost of the inner-man (woman). The Lord is literally giving a freeing release in this passage to all woman, by saying don’t get dragged into the worlds ways, which will drag you down, but be set free by dressing and adorning modestly. Many women, Christian and none, they can simply become shells, because of the time and continually thought of the outward, that they do not nurture and feed their inner-person, their soul, the true who they are, and thus they never fulfill what God has called them to be, who God has made them to be.

1 Timothy 1:5 (NKJV) ⁵ Now the purpose of the commandment is love from a pure heart, from a good conscience, and from sincere faith,

As we look at the world today, the definition of modesty gets harder and harder to define when it comes to dress, language, and actions. What does that look like in the church, in group settings of Christians? If a woman dresses in such a way that distracts anyone (male or female) from near to the Lord, if it draws attention to oneself and away from the Lord, then modesty was not the outfit for that day. Propriety means “with regards to others”, and immodest dress can distract others from drawing near to the Lord, the very reason they come to church.

But mind you, the church needs to recognize and be gracious with this fact, not everyone who comes to church is a believer, or may be a new baby believer, or someone who was never taught at their prior church this passage. So there is a place of grace to meet them where they are at as God is growing them, and maturing them in the things of the Lord, the very reason He has led them to a Bible teaching church so they could learn and grow.

Now as we discuss the role of woman in the church, specifically regarding teaching, the older woman in the church have a specific role in teaching the younger woman on things such as this. In Titus the word “discreet” there means “moderate”. And Romans 12:1-2, and how to be transformed by the renewing of the mind.

Titus 2:3-5 (NKJV) ³ *the older women likewise, that they be reverent in behavior, not slanderers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things—⁴ that they admonish the young women to love their husbands, to love their children, ⁵ to be discreet (moderate), chaste, homemakers, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God may not be blasphemed.*

Romans 12:1-2 (NKJV) ¹ *I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. ² And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.*

Last week I said in our teaching, our whole lives as redeemed believers is Romans 12:1-2, Lord in everything I do, what can I do right now in this situation to bring you glory, to glorify You? Lord as I spend time with my spouse, what I can do to bring you glory in my marriage? As I go to work what can I do today at work to bring you glory? This conversation that I am having with this person right now, how can I bring You glory in it? Lord, this outfit I am putting on today, will it bring you glory?

1 Corinthians 10:31 (NKJV) ³¹ *Therefore, whether you eat or drink, or whatever you do, do all to the glory of God.*

1 Corinthians 6:20 (NKJV) ²⁰ *For you were bought at a price; therefore glorify God in your body and in your spirit, which are God's.*

(1 Timothy 2:11 NKJV) Let a woman learn in silence with all submission.

(1 Timothy 2:12 NKJV) And I do not permit a woman to teach or to have authority over a man, but to be in silence.

(1 Timothy 2:13 NKJV) For Adam was formed first, then Eve.

(1 Timothy 2:14 NKJV) And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived, fell into transgression.

Well, much confusion, even much division, and many churches are buying into the cultural movement today, and in fear they are countering and disobeying this word of God, because they don't want to seem chauvinist, oppressive, or narrow. Wrong I say to my fellow brethren absolutely wrong. Is this doctrine essential for salvation no; but I believe destroying this doctrine will diminish the power of the Gospel, in for some people (especially the next generation) even destroy the Gospel. I will explain.....

But first, let me establish a few threads here.

Context.... Paul is telling Timothy how a Church is to be ordered. We have a key theme in “order”. God has order in the church to protect against confusion.... And is not the church today confused over this passage.

1 Corinthians 14:33 (NKJV) ³³ *For God is not the author of confusion but of peace, as in all the churches of the saints.*

1 Corinthians 14:40 (NKJV) ⁴⁰ *Let all things be done decently and in order.*

Timothy has been told to stay in Ephesus, and deal with the issues, and to face up to the problem people, even tell them to leave the church as Paul had done. And, a key context in this topic is the next chapter (reminder there were no chapter breaks) for this passage rolls right into the next passage regarding the church having Elders.

1 Timothy 1:3–4 (NKJV) ³ As I urged you when I went into Macedonia—remain in Ephesus that you may charge some that they teach no other doctrine, ⁴ nor give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which cause disputes rather than godly edification which is in faith.

1 Timothy 1:18–20 (NKJV) ¹⁸ This charge I commit to you, son Timothy, according to the prophecies previously made concerning you, that by them you may wage the good warfare, ¹⁹ having faith and a good conscience, which some having rejected, concerning the faith have suffered shipwreck, ²⁰ of whom are Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I delivered to Satan that they may learn not to blaspheme.

1 Timothy 3:1–7 (NKJV) ¹ This is a faithful saying: If a man desires the position of a bishop, he desires a good work. ² A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, temperate, sober-minded, of good behavior, hospitable, able to teach; ³ not given to wine, not violent, not greedy for money, but gentle, not quarrelsome, not covetous; ⁴ one who rules his own house well, having his children in submission with all reverence ⁵ (for if a man does not know how to rule his own house, how will he take care of the church of God?); ⁶ not a novice, lest being puffed up with pride he fall into the same condemnation as the devil. ⁷ Moreover he must have a good testimony among those who are outside, lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.

Notice the calling in verse 5, that the elders are to “rule” in the church (and if they can’t do it at home they surely can’t do it in the church). But that word “rule” means to “protect”. God is establishing an order in the church to “protect” the church, and thus also “provide” wholeness to it. There is a time when a threat in the church, must be rid of the church. God gives that role to men, pastors/elders to do. Paul is charging Timothy to do just that in Ephesus, and to raise up and appoint men (elders) to continue that on after Timothy leaves for his next assignment.

Now let me build on that thread. In Ephesians, men are called to “die” for their bride.

Ephesians 5:22–33 (NKJV) ²² Wives, submit to your own husbands, as to the Lord. ²³ For the husband is head of the wife, as also Christ is head of the church; and He is the Savior of the body. ²⁴ Therefore, just as the church is subject to Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything. ²⁵ Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the church and gave Himself for her, ²⁶ that He might sanctify and cleanse her with the washing of water by the word, ²⁷ that He might present her to Himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing, but that she should be holy and without blemish. ²⁸ So husbands ought to love their own wives as their own bodies; he who loves his wife loves himself. ²⁹ For no one ever hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, just as the Lord does the church. ³⁰ For we are members of His body, of His flesh and of His bones. ³¹ “For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh.” ³² This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the church. ³³ Nevertheless let each one of you in particular so love his own wife as himself, and let the wife see that she respects her husband.

John 10:11 (NKJV) ¹¹ “I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd gives His life for the sheep.

The Shepherds of the Church must protect the flock, even die for them. God calls men to protect. And so we begin to see the thread as it is woven. Jesus did this for His Bride, Pastors and Elders and to do this in the Church, and husbands are to do the same for their bride (and children). When this “order” is disrupted, then confusion begins.

Satan’s ultimate goal always is.... Steal, kill, destroy. But God speaks and says keep my order, and you will enjoy abundant spiritual life.

John 10:10 (NKJV) ¹⁰ The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly.

I said this is not essential for salvation, but is essential for understanding the Gospel. The Gospel is a man, seeking a bride. The Gospel is about a bride and a groom.

Revelation 19:7–8 (NKJV) ⁷ Let us be glad and rejoice and give Him glory, for the marriage of the Lamb has come, and His wife has made herself ready.” ⁸ And to her it was granted to be arrayed in fine linen, clean and bright, for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints.

John 3:16–17 (NKJV) ¹⁶ For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. ¹⁷ For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved.

Satan wants to destroy the order God has established. Notice verse 13, the order is Adam (man) first, then woman second. Notice in the garden, God made them male and female. Satan desires to destroy this structure, male and female, man and wife, bride and groom, so he can diminish, and in many ways will destroy the Gospel, the God the Father is seeking a bride for His Son.

1 Timothy 2:13 (NKJV) ¹³ For Adam was formed first, then Eve.

The Son so desired His Bride, that He would die for her, to have her.

Romans 5:6–11 (NKJV) ⁶ For when we were still without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly. ⁷ For scarcely for a righteous man will one die; yet perhaps for a good man someone would even dare to die. ⁸ But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were still sinners, Christ died for us. ⁹ Much more then, having now been justified by His blood, we shall be saved from wrath through Him. ¹⁰ For if when we were enemies we were reconciled to God through the death of His Son, much more, having been reconciled, we shall be saved by His life. ¹¹ And not only that, but we also rejoice in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received the reconciliation.

Satan wants to confuse this order in the world, and the church, and then in the home. I have no problem saying to any pastor or church, you ordaining woman, you allowing woman to teach over men and have authority over men, contributes to the confusion in our society of male and female, marriage between husband and wife, and the Gospel of God seeking a wife for Himself.

So – this order in the church

- It is about the Gospel (a Bride for the Son)
- It is about God's definitive order of Adam created first, a clear male and female
- It is about the order in the home, God's calling on Husbands to lead and wife to follow his leading.
- And it is about protection in the church, when a threat has to be dealt with, and removed from the church, that God has put it in the hearts of the pastors and elders to face it and deal with it regardless how unpliant it may be.

Now let me make some clarity on what is confused regarding woman teaching. It is woman not teaching or having authority over a man, but it doesn't say that a woman is not to teach, in fact woman are called to teach, they are to teach the young woman in the church. It is the Order God has established, it is not that woman are not to teach, but not to teach over men. In Titus woman are called to teach other woman how to keep their family and love their husband and children. If a woman teaches over a man, than that same order will carry over into the family and there will be confusion and struggle in the family. God has ordained it that the man is to be the leader of the church and home.

Titus 2:3–5 (NKJV) ³ the older women likewise, that they be reverent in behavior, not slanderers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things—⁴ that they admonish the young women to love their husbands, to love their children, ⁵ to be discreet, chaste, homemakers, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God may not be blasphemed.

By the way, please don't buy into the liberal dribble that the God-given roles were only applicable to the oriental culture of the first century and don't apply to us today. Paul anticipates this argument in verses 13-14. The biblical roles of male and female transcend cultural, for he traces them back to the creation - to the very first couple... "For Adam was formed first, then Eve..." Adam was "formed first," and like the Oriental title of "firstborn," this carried with it special privileges, and authority, and responsibility. God made Adam the head of the human race. The man received "headship." Yet how quickly both the man and woman violated their roles. They both bucked God's will. Paul states, "And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived, fell into transgression." Eve sinned when she usurped her husband's authority and negotiated with the devil. Adam on the other hand, was weak and failed to lead. And because of their mutual rebellion, sin entered the world. All of humanity has suffered since.

What does the remain silent mean, well culturally, in the synagogue woman sat on one side, and men on the other. So we can see the application was the wife wasn't to whisper over to the husband across the aisle, what did he (the teacher) mean by that. But also, the woman was not to go to the teacher and ask questions but remain silent in the congregation and go home and ask her husband. By doing this, asking the husband the spiritual questions, the spiritual union is strengthened between the two, and it also requires (maybe even forces) the husband to seek the Word, seek the Truth, so He can lead His wife and family as God established the husband to be. Hence why the order must be protect, wives go to husband for answers, and hence why if a woman becomes an authority in the church, the wives would see themselves as equal in that authority, and not seek out their husbands. Do you see how that weakens the family structure

God has designed, the order He in His wisdom has established to protect and provide for the family. God is saying, men when you come into the church see the structure, men lead, men die, men fight, men if need be wake up early and go to bed late if that what it takes to be the spiritual leader of the home.

1 Corinthians 14:34–35 (NKJV) ³⁴ Let your women keep silent in the churches, for they are not permitted to speak; but *they are to be submissive, as the law also says.* ³⁵ And if they want to learn something, let them ask their own husbands at home; for it is shameful for women to speak in church.

Question, where was Adam when Eve was being deceived by Satan. Why was Eve exploring spiritual things without Adam. Adam left her vulnerable and exposed because he wasn't there to protect her. Men it is your responsibility to protect your wife in the spiritual matters, you are to lead her into the deeper truths and relationship with the Lord. I remember a pastor telling the story of a little boy in his bookstore who wanted a Bible just like mommy, not daddy's, when asked why he said mommy's is more interesting because she is always reading hers, but daddy never reads his.

Genesis 3:1–8 (NKJV) ¹ Now the serpent was more cunning than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said to the woman, "Has God indeed said, 'You shall not eat of every tree of the garden?'" ² And the woman said to the serpent, "We may eat the fruit of the trees of the garden; ³ but of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God has said, 'You shall not eat it, nor shall you touch it, lest you die.' " ⁴ Then the serpent said to the woman, "You will not surely die. ⁵ For God knows that in the day you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil." ⁶ So when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree desirable to make one wise, she took of its fruit and ate. She also gave to her husband with her, and he ate. ⁷ Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves coverings. ⁸ And they heard the sound of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God among the trees of the garden.

What if your single woman? Then seek the older woman of the church (yes you can talk to pastor and elder), but you find in this church we won't do that without our wives, because of appearance of evil, but more so to direct you to a mentor of a godly woman to teach you.

Titus 2:3–5 (NKJV) ³ the older women likewise, that they be reverent in behavior, not slanderers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things—⁴ that they admonish the young women to love their husbands, to love their children, ⁵ to be discreet, chaste, homemakers, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God may not be blasphemed.

Also, let me make a clarity on woman being silent, as that is so misapplied.

- Woman can teach, other woman,
- and children (who have not made the age of being men yet).
- Woman can lead outside the church, at work or government, as we see that with Deborah in Judges (Judges 4)
- They can give spiritual understanding to a man, just not in a mixed worship setting, but alongside their husband, as we see in (Acts 18 (Priscilla and Aquilla) taught the young man Apollos the more accurate things regarding the things of the Lord
- And a woman can speak in the church, outload, during the prayer meeting. In 1 Corinthians 11, speaking of a public worship setting, they can prophesy and pray.

1 Corinthians 11:2–5 (NKJV) ² Now I praise you, brethren, that you remember me in all things and keep the traditions just as I delivered *them* to you. ³ But I want you to know that the head of every man is Christ, the head of woman *is* man, and the head of Christ *is* God. ⁴ Every man praying or prophesying, having *his* head covered, dishonors his head. ⁵ But every woman who prays or prophesies with *her* head uncovered dishonors her head, for that is one and the same as if her head were shaved.

The Christian Heart should be a Hopeful Heart (2:15)

Paul is saying if you do all these things then everything will be ok.

(1 Timothy 2:15 NKJV) Nevertheless she will be saved in childbearing if they continue in faith, love, and holiness, with self-control.

It is not that she would be saved in childbearing, we just read there is only one mediator, one way to God, and that is through Christ Jesus. But that she would not die in childbirth (although childbirth will be painful due to the fall), and although everyone is born with the sin nature, salvation is still available to all who would receive it.

1 Timothy 2:3-5 (NKJV) ³ For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior, ⁴ who desires all men to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth. ⁵ For there is one God and one Mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus,

John 3:16-17 (NKJV) ¹⁶ For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. ¹⁷ For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved.

Genesis 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ To the woman He said: "I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; In pain you shall bring forth children; Your desire shall be for your husband, And he shall rule over you."

The Greek word sozo, or "saved," meaning "the full orb of God's blessing". Woman get the role greater than pastor or president, they bear the next generation, they bear the children, who are meant to be the Bride for the Son.

Remain in that hope, even when it seems hard to be quiet and submissive, as God will honor you for doing so.

Chapter 2, The Church and its Members.

In this chapter will see and study the 5 things a "Christians Heart" should be.

1. The Christian Heart should be a Prayerful Heart. (v1-2)
2. The Christian Heart should be a Broken Heart. (v3-4)
3. The Christian Heart should be a Confident Heart. (v5-8)
4. The Christian Heart should be an Ordered Heart. (v9-14)
5. The Christian Heart should be a Hopeful Heart. (v15)

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Chapter 3

1 Timothy 3:1-7

Title: The Church and Its Elders

1 Timothy 3:1–7 (NKJV) ¹ This is a faithful saying: If a man desires the position of a bishop, he desires a good work. ² A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, temperate, sober-minded, of good behavior, hospitable, able to teach; ³ not given to wine, not violent, not greedy for money, but gentle, not quarrelsome, not covetous; ⁴ one who rules his own house well, having *his* children in submission with all reverence ⁵ (for if a man does not know how to rule his own house, how will he take care of the church of God?); ⁶ not a novice, lest being puffed up with pride he fall into the *same* condemnation as the devil. ⁷ Moreover he must have a good testimony among those who are outside, lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.

The Book of Timothy, written around 64-67AD. Paul the aged and experienced apostle writes to the young Pastor Timothy. Timothy traveled with Paul on his second missionary journey, and they had a special bond. Paul as we read in chapter one calls Timothy a true son in the faith.

Their bond was so close that Paul said no one else thinks so much like me than Timothy.

Philippians 2:19–20 (NKJV) ¹⁹ But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy to you shortly, that I also may be encouraged when I know your state. ²⁰ For I have no one like-minded, who will sincerely care for your state.

Paul and Timothy's story begins back in Acts 16 when Paul take him with him on his second missionary journey, and there this special father son relationship begins, and will last until Paul dies.

Acts 16:1–5 (NKJV) ¹ Then he came to Derbe and Lystra. And behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain Jewish woman who believed, but his father was Greek. ² He was well spoken of by the brethren who were at Lystra and Iconium. ³ Paul wanted to have him go on with him. And he took him and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in that region, for they all knew that his father was Greek. ⁴ And as they went through the cities, they delivered to them the decrees to keep, which were determined by the apostles and elders at Jerusalem. ⁵ So the churches were strengthened in the faith, and increased in number daily.

As Paul would establish churches and move on, we read that he would often leave Timothy behind to help those churches in their growth. As we will read this letter, we will see that although Timothy is in leadership, he still struggles with how to handle certain situations, he is still growing in his own maturity, and in leadership. I believe this book is applicable to all of us in some way or another because we are in the ministry in some form or fashion. Some teach bible Studies to adults, others are raising kids, some.....

Paul writes to Timothy so that he may know how the church is to function.

The Theme of this letter:

1 Timothy 3:14–16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

The Outline:

- The Church and its Message – Chapter 1
- The Church and its Members – Chapter 2 & 3
- The Church and its Minister – Chapter 4
- The Church and its Ministry to Itself – Chapter 5
- The Church and its Motives – Chapter 6

Paul will instruct Timothy how the church is function, but understand this, the church is both corporately, and individually. The things taught in this book are for us as a group, the church and its four walls, and for us individually, for we are the temple of God, we are the body of Christ, the sum of individuals make up the whole Church Body.

1 Corinthians 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?

These books (1&2 Timothy and Titus) have been called the Pastoral Epistles. For they help instruct ministers on how to serve in the ministry.

The second theme of this book, is chapter 1, verse 12:

(1 Timothy 1:12 NKJV) And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord who has enabled me, because He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry,

Being in the ministry is a gift from God, not a burden, be thankful to be called. Glean from this book so that you may be a faithful minister.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

(1 Timothy 3:1 NKJV) This is a faithful saying: If a man desires the position of a bishop, he desires a good work.

This is a faithful saying, meaning, this is a “true” saying.

Bishop –

This word is used interchangeably in the Scriptures for a Pastor, elder, or overseer. 1 Timothy 3:1 (WWSGNT): The word “bishop” is the rendering of episkopos (ἐπίσκοπος). The verbal form is episkopeō (ἐπισκοπέω), “to look over, to oversee, to superintend, to exercise oversight or care over.” The word came originally from secular life, referring to the foreman of a construction gang, or the supervisor of building construction, for instance. Thayer defines the word; “an overseer, a man charged with the duty of seeing that things to be done by others are done rightly, any curator, guardian, or superintendent.” The word was taken up by the Church, and designated an overseer of any Christian church. The responsibilities of this office have to do with the oversight and direction of the spiritual life of the local church.

Desires

The word “desire” is oregō (ὀρέγω), “to stretch one’s self out in order to touch or to grasp something, to reach after or desire something.” Thus the word means more than “to desire.” It includes the idea of reaching after or seeking. The word “desireth” is epithumeō (ἐπιθυμέω), “to passionately long after.”

Verse one says to desire is a good thing, and what a difference of what this would mean as the day it was written to the day that we read it. This is written during the time of Caesar Nero, and he was a mad man killing Christians. So to be a leader in the church, put yourself really out there as a forefront of attack, as many Christians were put in to the underground church of hiding and having to duck from all the things that was coming from Caesar Nero. If you were to be the pastor or the elder, you were really putting your life at risk in many ways, and the willingness to assume set your risk for the sake of the church and the people and the flock.

So right up front, let me explain the difference between an elder and a deacon. An elder is someone who is to oversee the spiritual care of the flock, the spiritual well-being of the flock, the spiritual things, and a deacon is a servant, someone who serves the flock. And yes, all serving helps the spiritual care and development of the flock, but the deacon is more about the serving of the practical things within the church.

So the elder is spiritual care and the deacon is physical care.

I do like the word as it's used here, work, that they desire a good work, but the fact is it's work, there's a price to pay for spiritual overseeing, to be one who cares for other's spiritual wellbeing. It's work, and what do we know about work is it can be tiring. Work can be physically exhausting, emotionally exhausting, mentally exhausting, and fatiguing so Paul is making a statement that the outer does work and it is way more than what many people would view it as someone who receives a title and recognition, it's anything but that in that it is work. Get ready to roll up your sleeves, spiritually speaking, and get to work, regardless of the cost.

The word "desire" is oregō (ὀρέγω), "to stretch one's self out in order to touch or to grasp something, to reach after or desire something." Thus the word means more than "to desire." It includes the idea of reaching after or seeking. The word "desireth" is epithumeō (ἐπιθυμῶ), "to passionately long after."

I love the story of when David became king of Israel, all of Israel, and he goes up to take Jerusalem to make it his capital. The city was considered impenetrable, they mocked David of his ability to take the city. David said to his men that whoever can climb up the water shaft and defeat the Jebusites would become chief of his army. We are told the name of the man in (1 Chronicles 11) is Joab, and he took the city and became the general of David's army. When I was growing up in Western Pennsylvania, I would crawl through water pipes that ran underneath the road, and you would encounter snakes, and rats, and opossums, and other creepy and crawly things. So no Joab would have encountered the same no doubt. And if he took a torch so he could see the creepy things, then he risked himself being seen as he came out the other side of the shaft/tunnel. If he went in without a torch then he couldn't see the creepy things, and would risk being bitten. And, let's consider this, when he got to the other side of the shaft, he had no idea how many armed soldiers he might encounter as he exited. This was a totally gutsy and bold move on behalf of Joab. What type of man wants to do an act such as this? Simply, a man who wanted to please his king. Such men who want to please the king, are bold, they are fearless, and they are passionately longing to please the king, for us that is KING JESUS.

2 Samuel 5:6–10 (NKJV) ⁶ And the king and his men went to Jerusalem against the Jebusites, the inhabitants of the land, who spoke to David, saying, "You shall not come in here; but the blind and the lame will repel you," thinking, "David cannot come in here." ⁷ Nevertheless David took the stronghold of Zion (that is, the City of David). ⁸ Now David said on that day, "Whoever climbs up by way of the water shaft and defeats the Jebusites (the lame and the blind, *who are hated by David's soul*), *he shall be chief and captain.*" Therefore they say, "The blind and the lame shall not come into the house." ⁹ Then David dwelt in the stronghold, and called it the City of David. And David built all around from the Millo and inward. ¹⁰ So David went on and became great, and the LORD God of hosts was with him.

Here is the ultimate objective of and in leadership, and it is to lead people before the throne of God. To take them from the place they are, into a deep intimate place with God. Whether pastoral, worship, youth, home, or community, our ultimate goal is to bring them into the presence of God, so they can worship Him in spirit and truth:

John 4:23–24 (NKJV) ²³ But the hour is coming, and now is, when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth; for the Father is seeking such to worship Him. ²⁴ God is Spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth."

And so we see though more than desire is needed as Paul will go on and he's going to identify that more than a desire, but there has to be a gifting that has been given from above by the Lord and a character that has been produced from within by the person as they've been shaped and molded by the Lord.

Interesting here regarding the elder, 15 things will be listed as prerequisites and continual expectation of the elder, and of them 14 deal with his character and only one deal with the gifting, and that gifting is of teaching.

(1 Timothy 3:2 NKJV) A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, temperate, sober-minded, of good behavior, hospitable, able to teach;

1.) Blameless,

Blameless doesn't mean perfection, but a simple definition is not living in a habitual lifestyle of any type of sin. But also, when accusations come, the accusation can't stick. Anybody can make an accusation, but there's no meat behind it when you're blameless.

And so the elders are to be blameless. A great application and illustration of that is above the accusations, a reputation that meets the role, character that is godly. Meaning, if a person was to walk in and see them in the church and know them from the community, they would not be surprised to hear that they are elders. The character and the reputation and the way they handle themselves in the community is the same as in the church. No one would be surprised and say, "Boy, I saw you at such and such place, or I know you from this and that gathering that is totally contradictory to what you represent here in this church."

But here on earth people will charge us with all kinds of things. If 60 Minutes did an investigative report on you, would you have anything to worry about. You take care of your character and God will take care of your reputation.

And as we read in chapter three, the theme of this book, the reason Paul is writing to Timothy is that the church is to be the pillar and ground of truth. And so before we get too far of just looking at inside the church, and we should, because every church should only have elders and pastors who fit and meet these requirements. But I say to you this day that if the church is the pillar and ground of truth for the community about it, then that would make every person who professes Christ as Lord and Savior, who goes to church, an elder in the community. Someone who takes Christ out into the community and represents the pillar and ground of truth. So in this sense, every person, regardless of age, is an elder in the community. And I extend it out. Every father is an elder in his home. Every mother is an elder to her children. And all children are elders to their siblings. So this passage goes far beyond just the elders in the church, as far as I can see, because what it lists of what a godly man, woman, godly teenager, godly youth are to be.

1 Timothy 3:14–15 (NKJV) ¹⁴ *These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.*

I am reminded of the calling that was upon Abraham, (THE FATHER OF THE NATION), as this word calls out to father's today, a making and a promising of a covenant, we be blameless, and the Lord promises His faithfulness.

Genesis 17:1–2 (NKJV) ¹ *When Abram was ninety-nine years old, the LORD appeared to Abram and said to him, "I am Almighty God; walk before Me and be blameless. ² And I will make My covenant between Me and you, and will multiply you exceedingly."*

2.) The Husband of One Wife,

Next up, the elder is to be the husband of one wife. If an elder is single, that doesn't exclude him from being an elder (1 Cor 7). If an elder is divorced and the divorce was biblical, he's not excluded. But what this means is the elder is a one-woman man. He is committed to his woman, his wife, the woman he would be dating if he was single. He's not a player. He's not out looking here and there. He is focused on being committed to his wife and how much more and exceedingly this word is in today, as we talk about all the images that just explode, not just on inappropriate sites, but any site now, as they sprinkle these images. And so a man of God has to decide how valuable is the internet and how much time should he be on.

1 Corinthians 7:32–36 (NKJV) ³² *But I want you to be without care. He who is unmarried cares for the things of the Lord—how he may please the Lord. ³³ But he who is married cares about the things of the world—how he may please his wife. ³⁴ There is a difference between a wife and a virgin. The unmarried woman cares about the things of the Lord, that*

she may be holy both in body and in spirit. But she who is married cares about the things of the world—how she may please her husband. ³⁵ And this I say for your own profit, not that I may put a leash on you, but for what is proper, and that you may serve the Lord without distraction. ³⁶ But if any man thinks he is behaving improperly toward his virgin, if she is past the flower of youth, and thus it must be, let him do what he wishes. He does not sin; let them marry.

The greatest Pastor there ever was, was a bachelor, Jesus Christ. Gang, those of you who are not married, wait for that helpmate that will double your ministry, that will draw you closer to the Lord, not distract you from him.

3.) Temperate,

The elder should be temperate, just even-keeled. And there's a place for all of us to just seek the Lord on that. The high highs and the low lows will give you a place that you make poor decisions. And all of us in the role of an elder, we need to stay steady and we need to ask for the help of the Lord to help us from swinging those high highs and those low lows. Because high aggression could over discipline, low, depression, if you would, could just come into the place that you don't even have a heart to minister because dealing with your own issues. And so there's a place that maybe an elder or someone recognizes that I'm not in a good place. Maybe I should step out for a while and take care of myself first before I start making decisions for others.

Another key characteristic of temperate, even-keeled is that the elder, the pastor, needs to just be focused on the word of God and not getting wrapped up in all the hot topic issues of the culture, or the cultural topics that everybody wants to make the priority. Or even elders and pastors in that place that they're wrapped up in what's the latest fad in the church that draws people and fills the seats. And so then they can go from one thing, to another, to another, and then another, and all the while be robbing the people. Because the pillar and ground of truth, as the church is to be, is the word of God, and the word of God will set people free. And so the church, the elders, the pastors, elders in the community, in the home, in the church need to stay focused and grounded on this one thing, the word of God, and not get wrapped up and moved emotionally to every wind of doctrine and every wind of what's considered the hot new topic, the way to go.

4.) Sober-minded,

Sober-minded just means to be serious. It doesn't necessarily mean to be tight and critical and overly controlling in any way, but sober-minded means to be controlled. And it ties in with the temperance. Doesn't mean you can't laugh and have joy and enjoyment, but there's a seriousness that comes of what's the calling and what is being required of an elder in the church, in the home, in the community.

When it's decision time, when it's leadership time, the person needs to be all there because we, as the church, the pillar and ground of truth, we're more than physical. We are eternal. And the things we do is more than physical here on earth in temporal states, but eternal and spiritual for all of eternity. So there's a place to recognize that and to reverence that, and then to approach that, as such, of what we're facing.

5.) Of Good Behavior,

Good behavior means just that. The elder in the church, in the home, in the community needs to be on their best behavior all the time. And it's sad to say, I've met elders who, or better said, pastors, who will just blow your mind with their teaching ability. Then when you're alone with them, the jokes they tell are coarse, and some of the feelings and resentment comes out that they have towards people. And God's just calling elders, pastors to just always be putting your best foot forward, best behavior always because you never know who's watching. And that's the key there, is you might just think that you'll never see this person again, and you behave in a certain way as you've been ripped off or mistreated, or just not dealt with well, say, at a restaurant or a store. And you always have to remember, you may just see that person one day walking into the church. And I always say to myself, and then, of course, my family, we have to always take the low road because you never know when they may walk into the church and recognize us and go, "Really? I remember your behavior when the soup got spilled on you," or whatever, "When you went and your car wasn't ready, but they told you to come anyways."

I think a good way to look at it is we're ambassadors. We're called to be ambassadors. When we walk out into our community, we are the ambassadors of Christ. We represent Christ and his kingdom. And I always say that we should stay well and studied on the Sermon on the Mount because it's the constitution of the kingdom of God. Every nation has a constitution of how the nation is to be run. The United States has a constitution and Jesus has the constitution of the kingdom of God. And then as we study Matthew chapter five, six, and seven, we know how we are to behave as the representatives of this, his nation, ambassadors unto him.

*2 Corinthians 5:20 (NKJV)*²⁰ *Now then, we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God were pleading through us: we implore you on Christ's behalf, be reconciled to God.*

Last week I said in our teaching, our whole lives as redeemed believers is Romans 12:1-2, Lord in everything I do, what can I do right now in this situation to bring you glory, to glorify You? Lord as I spend time with my spouse, what I can do to bring you glory in my marriage? As I go to work what can I do today at work to bring you glory? This conversation that I am having with this person right now, how can I bring You glory in it? Lord, this outfit I am putting on today, will it bring you glory?

*1 Corinthians 10:31 (NKJV)*³¹ *Therefore, whether you eat or drink, or whatever you do, do all to the glory of God.*

*1 Corinthians 6:20 (NKJV)*²⁰ *For you were bought at a price; therefore glorify God in your body and in your spirit, which are God's.*

6.) Hospitable,

Hospitable – means cordial and gracious. This doesn't mean you have to house everyone in need and feed every person in need. It means that people are comfortable around you, whether it is in your home or at Starbucks. They feel they can talk to you and not be judges or turned away. Remember our interface with the world, grace, mercy, and peace.

And the elder is to be hospitable, meaning they need to like people. They're called to prayer, they're called to the Word, but they're called to people. The prayer and the Word is all about getting to the people and ushering them into the presence of God. This is totally what the elder, pastoral ministry is about. Ushering people into the presence of God. And this would apply to people who are on the worship team, as they usher people into the presence of God. The hospitality is about liking people, loving people. And it's easy for this role to be all about locking away into a room and it's prayer and the Word, and then teach and speak. But then when it comes down to step down from the pulpit or to step down from the prayer meeting, to be able to embrace people and make them feel welcome in the house of God, in the community, in the home.

7.) Able to Teach;

Do you want to love on the Lord, then go teach someone:

*John 21:15–17 (NKJV)*¹⁵ *So when they had eaten breakfast, Jesus said to Simon Peter, "Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me more than these?" He said to Him, "Yes, Lord; You know that I love You." He said to him, "Feed My lambs." ¹⁶ He said to him again a second time, "Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me?" He said to Him, "Yes, Lord; You know that I love You." He said to him, "Tend My sheep." ¹⁷ He said to him the third time, "Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me?" Peter was grieved because He said to him the third time, "Do you love Me?" And he said to Him, "Lord, You know all things; You know that I love You." Jesus said to him, "Feed My sheep.*

But I must note and add there's a balance because some elders, pastors, they're not balanced the other way too. As we look at these 15 things that the elder or pastor, community leader, ambassador is to be, we see there is a place of the spiritual things of the study of the Word, which would also then lead to time of prayer. You can't teach if you don't pray. Oh, you can speak apart from praying, but you truly can't teach the Word of God apart from prayer. So the balance needs to be that the person isn't spending all their time in visitation-type things, in the hospitality-type things, because then they can be a people's person but then have nothing to give them because they haven't spent time in the Word and haven't spent time in prayer, and prayer being the way to align the mind and the will to the things of God. And then that's what you give to the people when you visit, is the mind of Christ and the heart of Christ and the will of Christ.

Nehemiah 8 verse 8 gives the simplicity of teaching is to read and explain. Here at Calvary Chapel, we go chapter by chapter, verse by verse, book by book, and we read it, we explain it, and then, most importantly, apply it. So we call it the inductive Bible study method. Observation, here's what it says. Interpretation, here's what it means based on its context and its meaning in the passage. And then application, how do I apply this to my life? And so again, as we look back at the requirements for an elder, a pastor, a family leader, a community leader, we need to be people of the Word so we can explain the Word, but then apply it. And the Pharisees were great at observation and interpretation, but then when it came to application, they were terrible and there was their falling, as they didn't know how to apply it into personal relationship with the Lord. [Nehemiah 8:8 \(NKJV\)](#) ⁸ So they read distinctly from the book, in the Law of God; and they gave the sense, and helped them to understand the reading.

And this ties back to just the temperate in that the teacher doesn't need to be, should not be, an entertainer or have to be Mr. Charismatic. They need to be a great teacher of the Word. And you know why? Because the Word will take care of itself when it's led out in accordance to how God has designed it to be. It's pre-programmed to do what it's designed to do. Draw people to Christ, change lives inside out, give eternal life for those who understand it and receive it, for the gift of salvation, the forgiveness of sin that separates from the holy God. And so to put any man's sweat into it is therefore to ruin it. And that's why we go back and see in the Old Testament that God's calling for the priest there in the temple was to wear linen, not heavy-duty wool. It was to be light. And so the priest in the temple wasn't to sweat over the things of God, serving the people in the temple. They were simply to get their inspiration from the Lord, not perspiration from the flesh.

And one of the things worth noting is that many people can be teachers without being a pastor. But the pastor has to be a teacher. In Ephesians, the gift, it's one and the same. Pastor, teacher. A pastor who can't teach should not be leading the church because the very role, in essence, of a pastor is to lead people by teaching them the Word of God. [Ephesians 4:11-13 \(NKJV\)](#) ¹¹ And He Himself gave some to be apostles, some prophets, some evangelists, and some pastors and teachers, ¹² for the equipping of the saints for the work of ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ, ¹³ till we all come to the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God, to a perfect man, to the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ;

(1 Timothy 3:3 NKJV) not given to wine, not violent, not greedy for money, but gentle, not quarrelsome, not covetous;

8.) Not Given to Wine,

So the elder, the pastor is not to be given over to wine, and this means to be under the influence, the control of alcohol. As leaders, you never know when you have the lead and you never know when you have to lead in terms of life and death. Every word carries weight in leadership, and so what's being made here is that the leader, the elder, the overseer, they're always in control. As we have discussed their behavior is always top and above reproach, and many times, of course, alcohol can destroy all of those things. It can make people make bad choices, leads to some bad behavior, and sober-minded, it can lead to making bad decisions. So recall, elders are not to be given to wine. It doesn't mean that they can't drink. It means that they should not spend time becoming under the influence of it.

The cultural application, though, is alcohol was a part of the culture. You would have to put alcohol into water just to kill all the bacteria and whatnot, and so why Paul would tell Timothy to take a little wine for his stomach. But there's a place that wine is a mucker, as we know. It can make people do foolish things, but it can also muck in such a way that it becomes a stumbling block in today's culture, because it's beyond just a little wine for your stomach. It's as always, for mankind, it can lead to the drunkenness. So an elder has to really be wise of the witness as ambassadors that they present for the weaker brother or sister, 1st Corinthians tells us that a brother or sister can walk in, see the elder pastor or the leader, community leader, your children in your home, and they can say, "Oh, well, if pastor Ray can drink beer here at the restaurant with his pizza, then it's okay for me."

But the problem is they can't stop at one or two and it consumes them. It, for many, destroys them. So it's not good for leaders to cause a stumbling block. I just say to anyone, "It's up to you. How much do you want to lead? How much do you want to be the ambassador? How much do you care about the person who struggles and that you may be a tipping point that tips them into that place that becomes a stronghold upon them?"

Now drunkenness is forbidden for all Christians:

1 Corinthians 6:9–11 (NKJV) ⁹ Do you not know that the unrighteous will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived. Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor homosexuals, nor sodomites, ¹⁰ nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners will inherit the kingdom of God. ¹¹ And such were some of you. But you were washed, but you were sanctified, but you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus and by the Spirit of our God.

What about Paul telling this Pastor Timothy to drink wine?

(1 Timothy 5:23 NKJV) No longer drink only water, but use a little wine for your stomach's sake and your frequent infirmities.

Paul is telling him this for medicinal purposes. Like in a third world country today, the water wasn't filtrated or purified, it contained many micro-organisms that would make you sick. Some stomachs could handle it, others couldn't. So they would use the alcohol from the wine to kill off the organism and make the water drinkable. Today it would be equivalent to someone saying your have the flu, take some Nyquil. Nyquil has 5% alcohol content.

(James 1:17 NKJV) Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and comes down from the Father of lights, with whom there is no variation or shadow of turning.

Now back to the issue of drinking, Leaders the stakes are high, is that liberty really worth it.

"Authorities now know that approximately one person in sixteen who ever takes a social drink will become an alcoholic! How many of you would get on an airplane if before it took off you knew there was a 1 out of 16 chance that it would crash and destroy your life. Actually, the odds for a commercial airliner crashing are closer to 1 out of 1,000,000; but even with those odds some people will not fly. Yet many of these same people will take a drink!" - Zig Ziglar

But why is the limited alcohol a requirement for the Pastor, Elder, church Leader. We see it in the Old Testament.

Leviticus 10:1–11 (NKJV) ¹ Then Nadab and Abihu, the sons of Aaron, each took his censer and put fire in it, put incense on it, and offered profane fire before the LORD, which He had not commanded them. ² So fire went out from the LORD and devoured them, and they died before the LORD. ³ And Moses said to Aaron, "This is what the LORD spoke, saying: 'By those who come near Me I must be regarded as holy; And before all the people I must be glorified.' " So Aaron held his peace. ⁴ Then Moses called Mishael and Elzaphan, the sons of Uzziel the uncle of Aaron, and said to them, "Come near, carry your brethren from before the sanctuary out of the camp." ⁵ So they went near and carried them by their tunics out of the camp, as Moses had said. ⁶ And Moses said to Aaron, and to Eleazar and Ithamar, his sons, "Do not uncover your heads nor tear your clothes, lest you die, and wrath come upon all the people. But let your brethren, the whole house of Israel, bewail the burning which the LORD has kindled. ⁷ You shall not go out from the door of the tabernacle of meeting, lest you die, for the anointing oil of the LORD is upon you." And they did according to the word of Moses. ⁸ Then the LORD spoke to Aaron, saying: ⁹ "Do not drink wine or intoxicating drink, you, nor your sons with you, when you go into the tabernacle of meeting, lest you die. It shall be a statute forever throughout your generations, ¹⁰ that you may distinguish between holy and unholy, and between unclean and clean, ¹¹ and that you may teach the children of Israel all the statutes which the LORD has spoken to them by the hand of Moses."

Application for us, don't take in strange fire, alcohol, before we present the Lord, our minds must be totally clear. When you present you must have your mind as totally clear as possible. Ministry truly is 24/7 in the sense, you are always on call. You never know when your child may come and tell you I did drugs, or my boyfriend is pressuring, or a loved one says its terminal, or my fiancée says change of plans.

Proverbs 23:29–35 (NKJV) ²⁹ Who has woe? Who has sorrow? Who has contentions? Who has complaints? Who has wounds without cause? Who has redness of eyes? ³⁰ Those who linger long at the wine, Those who go in search of mixed wine. ³¹ Do not look on the wine when it is red, When it sparkles in the cup, When it swirls around smoothly; ³² At the last it bites like a serpent, And stings like a viper. ³³ Your eyes will see strange things, And your heart will utter perverse things. ³⁴ Yes, you will be like one who lies down in the midst of the sea, Or like one who lies at the top of the mast, saying: ³⁵ "They have struck me, but I was not hurt; They have beaten me, but I did not feel it. When shall I awake, that I may seek another drink?"

Leaders will lead people. I can remember when I quit drinking (I was saved about 2 years), I was only a social drinker at this point, quit getting drunk and just have a few beers here and there. I

remember we were bowling, my buddy had given me a beer, and my back was turned facing the alley. I was getting ready to turn around and take a swig, but I felt this presence not to turn, instead I looked over my shoulder, and I saw one of my kids I taught in the 5/6th grade Sunday school, she was too shy to approach me, so she waited for me to see her. She loved me, always told me how she loved my class, I wonder what I would have taught her that day.

(Romans 14:21 NKJV) It is good neither to eat meat nor drink wine nor do anything by which your brother stumbles or is offended or is made weak.

1 Corinthians 8:8–13 (NKJV) ⁸ But food does not commend us to God; for neither if we eat are we the better, nor if we do not eat are we the worse. ⁹ But beware lest somehow this liberty of yours become a stumbling block to those who are weak. ¹⁰ For if anyone sees you who have knowledge eating in an idol's temple, will not the conscience of him who is weak be emboldened to eat those things offered to idols? ¹¹ And because of your knowledge shall the weak brother perish, for whom Christ died? ¹² But when you thus sin against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, you sin against Christ. ¹³ Therefore, if food makes my brother stumble, I will never again eat meat, lest I make my brother stumble.

Why the higher requirements for Leaders, because they have a higher calling:

Proverbs 31:4–5 (NKJV) ⁴ It is not for kings, O Lemuel, It is not for kings to drink wine, Nor for princes intoxicating drink; ⁵ Lest they drink and forget the law, And pervert the justice of all the afflicted.

9.) Not Violent,

Not to be violent, obviously we know that from the physical standpoint, and I think that speaks for itself, but I think there's a place of in control of the temper and the elders, pastor, they need to be in control of their temper. You want to be a leader in your home, you need to be in control of your temper. You want to be a leader in your community, you need to be in control of your temper because there's enough of something or someone to always give you a reason almost daily to lose your temper. We just need to be temperate and let God have control over our temper, our spirit. It's one of our greatest witnesses. It's one of our greatest anti-witnesses when we lose our temper, for once you lose your temper, once it explodes, once it's out there, it can't come back and some people will never forget it. So remember that.

10.)Not Greedy for Money,

The leader, the elder, they cannot be greedy, covetousness, and that's multiple layers. This is a good word for all leaders is that become materialistic, then of course, you're going to be spending that time in the material things, searching them out, buying them, procuring them, maintaining them, shining them, whatever it may be, and it will take away from the time needed for the ministry. Then inside the church, materialism can be even equally so that a lot of the money would rather go into decking out the place. I don't think there's anything wrong with having a comfortable facility and environment, but when it goes overboard and it can diminish the cause of Christ when people see, wow, look at all the money that's spent on the church and the church building, but also the place of... then it diminishes the cause of Christ for going into the missions and going to send people to missions and the likes. So I think it goes across the board. It's just in the heart, that materialism is in the heart, then it's going to affect every area of all these things that we've discussed.

11.)But Gentle,

"Take My yoke upon you and learn of Me: for I am meek and lowly of heart; and ye shall find rest to your souls."—Matt. 11:29.

(1 Timothy 1:2 NKJV) To Timothy, a true son in the faith: Grace, mercy, and peace from God our Father and Jesus Christ our Lord.

Remember our study on verse 2 of chapter 1?

Some simple definitions:

- **Grace** – getting what you don't deserve. We deserve nothing from God, yet in His grace He pours His love out upon us,
- **Mercy** – is not getting what you deserved. Our sins sentenced us to hell, but God's love on the cross gave us eternal life.

- **Peace** – At one with God, the issue of sin and separation was dealt with on the cross, you are no longer at war with Him because your sin offended the Holy God.

These are words as they relate to our relationship with Christ, but they carry-over and apply in our inter-personal lives also. You know over and over I have been taught that this is a typical Pauline greeting, grace, mercy, and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ, but this time I really noticed different, I noticed the heart of Paul, and I desired to be the same.

You see when Paul met people, whether new or old acquaintances, the first thing he wanted to flow from him to them, was grace, mercy and peace. That when Paul met someone they would know that love was waiting for them, that they were not going to be judged, and that they would be received regardless of who they are. As soon as you met Paul, you would feel comfortable.

I say this often, but let this be the church, let us be the person, that will be the last stop. People will hear about this church or you, and say this is my last stop, my last shot, if I'm not accepted here, or not accepted by him/her, I'll never be accepted anywhere – I'll just give up on this whole religion thing.

I asked myself this, and need to ask myself this on every greeting I give someone; is grace, mercy, and peace what precedes me, and flows from me? Do people feel accepted and comfortable when they meet with me. Grace, mercy, and peace, may that always be our interface with the world and within the church.

12.) Not Quarrelsome,

Not quarrelsome, means fighting back – Always leave tomorrow open for ministry. Once you revile back, get your say in, no matter how justified you may be, once you do so, you lose out on the opportunity of ministering to that person tomorrow. Once the bridge is burned, there is no coming back together.

You will always be a target if you are in the ministry and/or just being used by God. People have axes to grind, or guilt of their own sin, so they think if they can pull you down, then your counsel will be nullified. If you revile them back, then you confirm their point, damage the relationship for today and most likely tomorrow. Hold your tongue, always leave tomorrow open for ministry. People like to gossip about people, it releases them from looking at their faults while they study your faults, but one thing I know, tomorrow when their marriage is hurting, their life is hurting, it is not gossip or backbiting that will get them through it, it will be godly counsel. Your grace, mercy and peace will be an open door for them to come back and be loved and comforted. Always, always leave tomorrow open for ministry.

13.) Not Covetous,

And “not covetous...” or envious over other people... even over other pastors, churches, and ministries. Covet means to not be satisfied with what God has given. A leader cannot covet (not be satisfied) with the role they have (wanting a higher position), nor covet more people, more respect, more power, and the likes. The leader serves where God has them, faithfully, as long as God has them in that role and place. When a leader wants more, they become unsatisfied with what they have, and that most always leads into frustration, and that frustration carries over to the people, the sheep, and the leader begins to become frustrated at the people, and takes it out on the people.

(1 Timothy 3:4 NKJV) one who rules his own house well, having his children in submission with all reverence

(1 Timothy 3:5 NKJV) (for if a man does not know how to rule his own house, how will he take care of the church of God?);

14.) One Who Rules His Own House Well

To rule his own home well, it literally means that the word of God will be what makes determination what happens in the home. To rule means safe or out as an umpire would, if you would. The elder rules his house in accordance to this is what the word of God says, not our opinions or the culture, but what God says, not whether it upsets the wife or children, what the word of God says. So there's a black and white ground that everyone can meet on and decide what needs to be done based on the word of God.

In that the elder of the home will lead his children well, the children will be submissive to the father. Again, it comes down to based on this is what the word of God says. But a father can allow the children to make up what is acceptable. It's based on what the word of God says. This speaks of children at home that are still under the authority. It doesn't speak of children that are outside of the home because they've become their own adults, and now they've taken on their own ownership and leadership of themselves. So ruling in the home.

So important as you look at these things, speaking of the marriage, speaking of the children, once a pastor, elder steps into the ministry, they just become a target for attack from the enemy. So one of the greatest places to hit is the children, and then one of the other greatest places to hit of course is the marriage. Maybe you wonder that why, hey, everything seems so well and then we signed up to start being part of this ministry or that ministry, then all of a sudden you find all these things happening. Well, that's why, because the enemy wants to distract you and he wants to hit you so that you'll get off the mission of the leading of the ministry that God has called you to. So when you're attacked and when you suffering tribulation, maybe even persecution, rejoice in that because the enemy finds you a threat and he's got to try to get you off of that target that you're shooting for. You become the target that he's shooting for. So rejoice, because your enemy sees you and knows your name now.

Let me just say, it's worth it. Some people go, "It's not worth it to me. I don't want to put up with all this." But when you represent Christ and you lead people to the throne of God and they get it and they receive it and their lives start to change and you are part of that, there's nothing more glorious. Offer me CEO of a major corporation, I wouldn't take it for anything compared to being able to pastor, teach and get to watch people come before the throne of grace and find help in their time of need. So don't quit, Christian. Ride it out, it's worth it. One day, you'll hear, well done, good and faithful servant.

(1 Timothy 3:6 NKJV) not a novice, lest being puffed up with pride he fall into the same condemnation as the devil.

15.) Not a Novice,

Then the elder, the pastor, the home leader, the community leader, the church leader, they're not to be novices. They have to have some experience under their belt. So basically, what Paul's telling Timothy is don't lay hands quickly onto somebody. Let them make sure that they've got enough experience in life, that they've seen a few things, especially that they've seen how the devil operates because those are the biggest surprise of where in the world did this come from? Well, it came from the devil because you stepped out in faith. Wait for God's timing. Never teach above your level of understanding and knowledge. Be faithful in the little things, and God will raise you up into greater things. The things you desire will come to pass, but you have to be developed before you can do.

Hey Moses was 40 years old when he got God's calling. Then he spent 40 years in the desert, then he spent 40 years leading them in the desert.

When the timing wasn't right, Moses couldn't bury 1 Egyptian, but when the timing was right, he buried the Egyptian army.

To watch for pride, well, you go through enough battles and you get slapped down enough by the world, the devil and even Christians who you are serving in the ministry, you'll find out why you're

doing it. Whether you're doing it for the Lord or you're doing it for your own selfish pride, because even your own selfish pride won't want to endure long hauls of this. It will just be, I'd rather just go do something else.

(1 Timothy 3:7 NKJV) Moreover he must have a good testimony among those who are outside, lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.

A Good Testimony,

A good reputation in the community. I am reminded how sad and how much resistance we had trying to find a place to meet. We call and people are all interested until we say we are a church, then the whole attitude changes. What it is in many cases is that churches have burned them before. I went to the fire hall and they were all into renting until I said what for, then they said to be honest, the last church group stiffed, caused us some great financial loss because they bailed on their agreement. The church has to be a good witness in the community, leaders do also.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Passage: 1 Timothy 3:8-13

Title: Servants in the Church and Their Vitalness in What God is Building

1 Timothy 3:8–16 (NKJV) ⁸ Likewise deacons *must be* reverent, not double-tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy for money, ⁹ holding the mystery of the faith with a pure conscience. ¹⁰ But let these also first be tested; then let them serve as deacons, being *found* blameless. ¹¹ Likewise, *their wives must be* reverent, not slanderers, temperate, faithful in all things. ¹² Let deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling *their* children and their own houses well. ¹³ For those who have served well as deacons obtain for themselves a good standing and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus. ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, *I write* so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

The Book of Timothy, written around 64-67AD. Paul the aged and experienced apostle writes to the young Pastor Timothy. Timothy traveled with Paul on his second missionary journey, and they had a special bond. Paul as we read in chapter one calls Timothy a true son in the faith.

Their bond was so close that Paul said no one else thinks so much like me than Timothy.

Philippians 2:19–20 (NKJV) ¹⁹ But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy to you shortly, that I also may be encouraged when I know your state. ²⁰ For I have no one like-minded, who will sincerely care for your state.

Paul and Timothy's story begins back in Acts 16 when Paul take him with him on his second missionary journey, and there this special father son relationship begins, and will last until Paul dies.

Acts 16:1–5 (NKJV) ¹ Then he came to Derbe and Lystra. And behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain Jewish woman who believed, but his father was Greek. ² He was well spoken of by the brethren who were at Lystra and Iconium. ³ Paul wanted to have him go on with him. And he took him and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in that region, for they all knew that his father was Greek. ⁴ And as they went through the cities, they delivered to them the decrees to keep, which were determined by the apostles and elders at Jerusalem. ⁵ So the churches were strengthened in the faith, and increased in number daily.

As Paul would establish churches and move on, we read that he would often leave Timothy behind to help those churches in their growth. As we will read this letter, we will see that although Timothy is in leadership, he still struggles with how to handle certain situations, he is still growing in his own maturity, and in leadership. I believe this book is applicable to all of us in some way or another because we are in the ministry in some form or fashion. Some teach bible Studies to adults, others are raising kids, some.....

Paul writes to Timothy so that he may know how the church is to function.

The Theme of this letter:

1 Timothy 3:14–16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, *I write* so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

The Outline:

- The Church and its Message – Chapter 1
- The Church and its Members – Chapter 2 & 3
- The Church and its Minister – Chapter 4
- The Church and its Ministry to Itself – Chapter 5
- The Church and its Motives – Chapter 6

Paul will instruct Timothy how the church is function, but understand this, the church is both corporately, and individually. The things taught in this book are for us as a group, the church and its four walls, and for us individually, for we are the temple of God, we are the body of Christ, the sum of individuals make up the whole Church Body.

1 Corinthians 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?

These books (1&2 Timothy and Titus) have been called the Pastoral Epistles. For they help instruct ministers on how to serve in the ministry.

The second theme of this book, is chapter 1, verse 12:

(1 Timothy 1:12 NKJV) And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord who has enabled me, because He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry,

Being in the ministry is a gift from God, not a burden, be thankful to be called. Glean from this book so that you may be a faithful minister.

First Off

First off I start our study today with making the point of verses 14-15, it is God's Church

1 Timothy 3:14-15 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.

It's God's church. And I think it's so easy, and much too "allowed," that pastor and church leaders start to think it's their church. And then they start taking liberties of how they think the church can and should be managed and handled and the flock to be cared for. And yet God is making it clear that it's His church and then, based on that, how he wants His church to be handled. And when I say "handled," it's a whole different handling when it's God's hand upon the church, as God holds and God gently lifts and carries and brushes his hand over his beloved's face, putting the hair out of their eyes, as their face is downcast from a failure or failing, as he puts his hands on the cheeks and lifts up the head and says, "Look at me. Look into my eyes. See my heart that I have for you." The handling of God's church will always be different from the way man would handle it. Even as man would think he's handling in such wisdom, but many times he's handling it in the ways that the world is saying it should be so. But nothing will ever beat the way God says it is to be.

And so he goes on and he gives what his expectation is: for the men in the church to be men of prayer, for the women in the church to be known for good works, and submitting unto the Lord, and serving unto the Lord. And then he gave the Word on how he expects his pastors and elders, the overseers, to handle the church. And now he comes into the deacons, the servants, those who do the table-waiting, as we see in Acts Chapter 6. So God is very, very, very clear how he wants his church to be handled, because he wants it to be handled in a way that protects the flock and provides for the flock. And as we said last week, and there will be the continual theme. Because of John Chapter 4, the day will come when we shall worship in spirit and truth, the Lord wanting to bring us into his presence; Hebrews Chapter 4, and find help, and find grace, and find the love of Christ, and be experiencing that in spirit. It's a spiritual thing. And the church should never be run as a physical thing, some type of mechanical thing, some type of business like the local business in the community. But it's spiritual, to bring people into a spiritual depth in the spiritual realm with the God who created them. And the truth, because only the truth will set someone free and churches need to speak the truth because they are the pillar and ground for truth inside the church and outside in the community.

Acts 6:1-4 (NKJV) ¹ Now in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplying, there arose a complaint against the Hebrews by the Hellenists, because their widows were neglected in the daily distribution. ² Then the twelve summoned the multitude of the disciples and said, "It is not desirable that we should leave the word of God and serve tables. ³ Therefore, brethren, seek out from among you seven men of good reputation, full of the Holy Spirit and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business; ⁴ but we will give ourselves continually to prayer and to the ministry of the word."

John 4:23-24 (NKJV) ²³ But the hour is coming, and now is, when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth; for the Father is seeking such to worship Him. ²⁴ God is Spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth."

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

John 8:32 (NKJV) ³² And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free."

And so what a high calling for each and every one of us who are part of the church. Look what God does, and presents, and speaks to us: "You are the pillar and ground of truth." And he's speaking to a lost and dying world; that's who we are. He's speaking to our community; that's who we are. And he's given us a high calling to be part of building something, and doing something great: building the Kingdom of God, and providing a place for the world and people to come into from the world. And yes, the wrath to come. And I pray for each and every one of us we see that we're called to way more than just coming to church, but we're called to something greater. As we closed out last week, Verse 7, and it says, "To be known." And God has given us that ability to be known in Heaven and on Earth, to be known as his, to be known as ones who the world can come and find truth and find firm and solid foundation. What an amazing high calling each and every one of us get. We get to be called sons and daughters, saved and brought into the family, adopted, and nothing will ever change that, and then to be ambassadors to a lost and dying world. I don't know about you, but I get excited that my life means something. And that I don't just get through life, I get into life and lives of others.

1 Timothy 3:7 (NKJV) ⁷ Moreover he must have a good testimony among those who are outside, lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.

So we see there's a difference between elder and deacon. Again, elder's responsible for spiritual oversight. They should be teachers of the Word. And Acts Chapter 6 gives us even the greatest biblical example, in that there was a complaint against the church that not everybody was being taken care of equally and along the same manners of distribution of goods. And we see that when the dispute arose, the elders came, the apostles, and they said, "It's not good for us to be taken away from the Word and prayer." So then they sought out the Lord, and found seven godly men who were appointed overseers, to minister to the material things, the physical things within the church. And so what we see, and the vital-ness of it, and it can't be missed, is many people say, "Well I can't teach," or, "I'm not this great counselor." But the picture of it is the power of it that the people who do the material, the ministerial things physically, they are freeing up those who God has called to be the spiritual oversight leaders. And it frees them up to spend more time in the prayer, frees them up to spend more time in the Word, so that they can come and teach the Word accurately and, as we've seen through our study here, that they're not to be teaching errancy, or they're not to be teaching strange doctrine. And of course, if a pastor doesn't get to spend time in the Word, it could easily lend itself to making errors because they didn't study as, God has said, "Study to show thyself approved unto the Lord, a workman who need not be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word.

The point that I make is the power of, we can say, "Oh, I just help tidy up the church," or, "I just do door greeting," or, "I just help set up the food," whatever it may be. But there is a spiritual reward and inheritance that comes with that because if the spiritual leaders had to do those things, then they will be taken away from the spiritual things to do the physical things, and then the whole church would be robbed of that. And I just say that is you have no idea, you who do the ministerial things that maybe nobody sees or recognizes, running sound boards and setting up chairs and these types of things, oh, the power that is in that, that I say brings tremendous spiritual reward and blessing to the church. So don't ever hear the Devil, or your flesh, or the world, diminish the vital-ness of the ministry that you do, of waiting on tables.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do His might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

(1 Timothy 3:8 NKJV) Likewise deacons must be reverent, not double-tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy for money,

Here we see the confident heart and the ordered heart. A deacon is confident in his position within the church, knowing God's call on his life, and they understand the order in the church, and how vital their role is.

Deacon, servant, and minister all come from the Greek word (diakonos)

The office of the deacon is not spiritual overseeing, but overseeing the practical things. Deacons are so vital in the church, yet so often unappreciated. Recognize them in the church and be thankful for them

Acts 6:1–7 (NKJV) ¹ Now in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplying, there arose a complaint against the Hebrews by the Hellenists, because their widows were neglected in the daily distribution. ² Then the twelve summoned the multitude of the disciples and said, "It is not desirable that we should leave the word of God and serve tables. ³ Therefore, brethren, seek out from among you seven men of good reputation, full of the Holy Spirit and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business; ⁴ but we will give ourselves continually to prayer and to the ministry of the word." ⁵ And the saying pleased the whole multitude. And they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and the Holy Spirit, and Philip, Prochorus, Nicanor, Timon, Parmenas, and Nicolas, a proselyte from Antioch, ⁶ whom they set before the apostles; and when they had prayed, they laid hands on them. ⁷ Then the word of God spread, and the number of the disciples multiplied greatly in Jerusalem, and a great many of the priests were obedient to the faith.

These men took care of the practical things so that the pastor and overseers could focus on prayer and the study of the word. If the pastor did all the details, then he would have no time to study and pray. Deacons are so vital in the church, yet so often unappreciated. Recognize them in the church and be thankful for them.

Notice in Acts they had to be spirit filled, not a college degree. It is interesting to see that serving in the practical areas first prepared men to go into leadership roles in the church.

Stephen was the first deacon chosen, and then the next time we hear of him he is preaching the Gospel, and being martyred for his faith. But more awesome is that Jesus is not seated at the right-hand of the Father, but gets up and is standing to receive His faithful minister.

Acts 6:8–12 (NKJV) ⁸ And Stephen, full of faith and power, did great wonders and signs among the people. ⁹ Then there arose some from what is called the Synagogue of the Freedmen (Cyrenians, Alexandrians, and those from Cilicia and Asia), disputing with Stephen. ¹⁰ And they were not able to resist the wisdom and the Spirit by which he spoke. ¹¹ Then they secretly induced men to say, "We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses and God." ¹² And they stirred up the people, the elders, and the scribes; and they came upon him, seized him, and brought him to the council.

Acts 7:54–60 (NKJV) ⁵⁴ When they heard these things they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed at him with their teeth. ⁵⁵ But he, being full of the Holy Spirit, gazed into heaven and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing at the right hand of God, ⁵⁶ and said, "Look! I see the heavens opened and the Son of Man standing at the right hand of God!" ⁵⁷ Then they cried out with a loud voice, stopped their ears, and ran at him with one accord; ⁵⁸ and they cast him out of the city and stoned him. And the witnesses laid down their clothes at the feet of a young man named Saul. ⁵⁹ And they stoned Stephen as he was calling on God and saying, "Lord Jesus, receive my spirit." ⁶⁰ Then he knelt down and cried out with a loud voice, "Lord, do not charge them with this sin." And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

And then there was Phillip one of these first seven men selected, he became an evangelist and had a great revival going on.

Acts 8:5–8 (NKJV) ⁵ Then Philip went down to the city of Samaria and preached Christ to them. ⁶ And the multitudes with one accord heeded the things spoken by Philip, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did. ⁷ For unclean spirits, crying with a loud voice, came out of many who were possessed; and many who were paralyzed and lame were healed. ⁸ And there was great joy in that city.

But His greatest ministry was to his family, and the leader he was in the family, spirit filled virgin daughters:

Acts 21:8–9 (NKJV) ⁸ On the next day we who were Paul's companions departed and came to Caesarea, and entered the house of Philip the evangelist, who was one of the seven, and stayed with him. ⁹ Now this man had four virgin daughters who prophesied.

Be faithful in these things, and God will know He can trust you with the spiritual things.

(Matthew 25:23 NKJV) "His lord said to him, 'Well done, good and faithful servant; you have been faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many things. Enter into the joy of your lord.'

Deacons/Servers, whether male or female, are so vital to a healthy church, and there are never enough deacons for any churches. Parking lot ushers, church ushers, burger flippers at the church picnic, cleaning ministry, set-up ministry, the list is endless. But here are the list of qualifications for the work of the deacon.

Must be reverent

The word reverent means "grave", and the basic meaning here is serious. Simply put they are serious about the business of the church. As I like to say, sign-up, and thus show-up. They are serious about the work and deeds they will do for the church, the people, the King.

The position of deacon in the New Testament sense calls for hard work and often, long hours. A deacon must be as diligent in his sacred work as he is in his secular employment. It is astonishing how some deacons put their hearts and souls into their careers and then turn around and render indifferent service to the church. (Phillips)

The word also means to show proper respect towards both God and man. And we all do that when we serve people, as we show them they are "worth", worthy, of value, that they are worth being served.

not double-tongued

dilogos, dil'-og-os; equivocal, i.e. telling a different story:--double-tongued.

The next qualification Paul listed is that a deacon should not be "doubletongued." The word for "doubletongued" occurs only here in the New Testament and means "saying the same thing twice," or "given to repetition." A doubletongued person says something to one person and then, when talking to another person, puts an altogether different slant on the subject. Today, instead of saying that someone is doubletongued, we might say that he is fork-tongued (like a serpent) or that he talks out of both sides of his mouth.

Nothing could be more destructive in a local church than a doubletongued deacon. A deacon has to be a man of the highest integrity because he often has to deal with sensitive matters. He must be able to control his tongue, even when being pumped by another, including his wife. It is better for him to say nothing at all than to say one thing to one person and something else to another. A man who earns the reputation of being conversationally unreliable is rendered useless in his office, for no one really wants to confide in a loose-tongued deacon.

not given to much wine

A deacon, Paul said, must not be "given to much wine." The word translated "wine" here is oinos. It is the usual New Testament word for wine. The same word is used in Ephesians 5:18 (where intoxication is evidently in view); in John 2:10; and in 1 Timothy 5:23 (where Paul advises his young colleague to use wine moderately for medicinal purposes).

A deacon must never overindulge. What could be worse than a drunken deacon? Although the Bible does not specifically demand total abstinence, it most certainly militates against drunkenness in the strongest terms (1 Cor. 6:9–10; Gal. 5:19–21). The New Testament's warning against indulging in anything that might cause a brother to stumble practically rules out the use of wine altogether (Rom. 14:21).

Not greedy for money

The deacons, they can't be greedy for money because they handle the things that are meant to serve the people, reach the people, as we see in Acts 6. It's the goods and the services and the things within the church that are meant to get to the people so that the people can be taken care of. There needs to be a contentment in the heart of the deacon.

The deacon must also be faultless in the matter of wealth. He must not be "greedy of filthy lucre," said Paul. The word translated "greedy" conveys the picture of someone who is eager to make money. We recognize in the old-fashioned word lucre the root of our modern word lucrative. No deacon should be in the ministry merely to make money. God does not want greedy deacons any more than He wants drunken deacons. If someone wants to be well paid for his service, he is probably disqualified.

One of the Lord's disciples was "greedy of filthy lucre." His name was Judas. He held the bag, kept accounts for the apostolic fellowship, was in charge of its charities, bought the groceries, and paid the bills. The trouble was that he had a habit of dipping into the bag to feather his own nest. He figured that he had a right to do so; being a disciple was not proving to be as lucrative as he had expected. So far, all he had been able to get his hands on was small change.

When Judas first joined the messianic movement, he was full of high hopes. Doubtless, he envisioned himself receiving a well-paying position in the millennial kingdom. Possibly he saw himself becoming the secretary of the treasury. But when those hopes began to dim, he decided to cash in by selling Jesus to His enemies. Judas didn't get much, just the price of a female slave. He was a deacon "greedy of filthy lucre," and he ended up a suicide.

(1 Timothy 3:9 NKJV) holding the mystery of the faith with a pure conscience.

With a pure conscience

Back to the first study, not getting wrapped-up in foolishness, but holding to the message in simplicity and truth:

1 Timothy 1:4-5 (NKJV) ⁴ nor give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which cause disputes rather than godly edification which is in faith. ⁵ Now the purpose of the commandment is love from a pure heart, from a good conscience, and from sincere faith,

from a pure heart

A pure heart means you have narrowed your focus on 1 thing – God. Let your focus stray onto other things and so will the truth, and you will quit living to the truth and your heart will become impure.

good conscience

Consensus asks the question: Is it popular? Conscience asks: Is it right? If you are teaching the word straight-up, living it obediently, you can rest your head on your pillow at night knowing you did the will of God, and that God is pleased with you.

from sincere faith

Faith that is real, not phony. You can read a phony Christian a mile away, they tell you their stories and excuses for doing this and doing that. Why tell excuses to other Christians, who cares what they think of you, you need to worry what God thinks of you.

Holding the mystery of the faith

The deacon is to be a person deep in the faith. Now we see the difference, they're not to be a teacher not having to be a teacher, but they are to know the word. They have to have a solid foundation in the word.

I think it is grievous, and must be guarded greatly, when a church will allow someone to serve in a ministry (worship, technical, administrative) who are greatly gifted with talent, but severely lacking

in spirituality. It sends the wrong message to the person that they are godly because they are gifted, but it also fails in the base principal of how do you know where to lead to, if you are not being led by the Lord because the person doesn't know the Word and Will of God.

Let it be known that an elder or pastor is not more spiritual or more godly than anyone else in the church. They're just called to be the overseer, so they need to invest themselves deeply in the spiritual things. When we come to the deacon, they're not a lesser person than the elder or the pastor, nor are they a greater person than the people they serve in the church. But they are to know the word, how to handle the word, because you can't handle and serve without understanding what the word of God is and the will of God is.

(1 Timothy 3:10 NKJV) But let these also first be tested; then let them serve as deacons, being found blameless.

Again they are to withstand the 60 minutes investigation. But see, they are to first be tested, meaning there is a period of watching them work without the title before you make them a deacon. As for me, God makes you a deacon first, and then man just confirms what God has done in the man. The man is already working as a servant in the church, he is flipping burgers at the church picnic, he is picking up the cigarette butts in the parking lot, he is serving the body without needing a title.

(1 Timothy 3:11 NKJV) Likewise their wives must be reverent, not slanderers, temperate, faithful in all things.

It is difficult to know if Paul here referred here to female deacons (such as Phoebe, in Romans 16:1), or the wives of male deacons. The original wording will permit either possibility. This translation would permit the additional interpretation of women deacons. There were such women in the early church, e.g. Rom. 16:1, where Phoebe is spoken of as a servant (same word as "deacon") of the church at Cenchrea.¹⁰ A clue as to the type of service which these women performed in the church is given in Romans 16:2, where Paul says of Phoebe that "she has been a helper of many and of myself also."

[Romans 16:1–2 \(NKJV\)](#) ¹ I commend to you Phoebe our sister, who is a servant of the church in Cenchrea, ² that you may receive her in the Lord in a manner worthy of the saints, and assist her in whatever business she has need of you; for indeed she has been a helper of many and of myself also.

So of course woman can serve in ministry, even lead them, but to the limit that they are not to have an authority over men (see that past study).

I've seen many a men be disqualified form the ministry because of their wives being gossips, or having on-going quarrels with other ladies in the church.

Single men, here God is telling you attributes to be looking for in your future wife.

Wives, all qualities should desire to be. Faithful in all things, all means all.

Must be reverent

Their wives are to be reverent. The word reverent means to be serious, and it means to be serious about the kingdom business.

Not slanderers (not gossipers)

It goes on to say that the wives are not to be double-tongued. This means that the wives are going to know a lot of what's going on in the church because of what the deacons are doing. The calling here is for the wives to be very protective of the information. Because they could take the information and tell someone, "Hey, did you know that so-and-so ended up getting a bag of groceries because they ran on the financial difficulties because," and then it goes on and on.

Then someone who would hear the story goes, "Really? I didn't know. I thought everything was well." So you can see that the wives need to be very reverent and protective of the information that they receive. Sometimes the wives, whether it's elders or deacons, they do get information that is sensitive to matters that are really sensitive to people, that they have to keep that under guard and protect it because they're dealing with people's reputation, and they're dealing with people's lives, in a spiritual sense and physical.

Temperate

A deacon's wife must also be "sober." The word translated "sober" here is translated "vigilant" in 3:2. It can also be rendered "temperate." So Paul was saying that a deacon's wife must be a steady, self-controlled person

Faithful in all things

Furthermore, a deacons wife must be "faithful in all things." She must be dependable. Possibly Paul had in mind the model wife described by Solomon in Proverbs 31

I always just love the picture of husband and wives doing ministry together. It's just beautiful. As they get to serve, they get to lift up the burdens of people, they get to minister to people, they get to love on people, and they do it together. Maybe sometimes behind the wall that no one really knows, or under the radar, as it's been said. But they just have this joy that they get to do something together, and they get to bring their children into it together and have a ministry that glorifies the Lord together. It's just a beautiful thing when a husband and wife serves together, and a family serves together.

(1 Timothy 3:12 NKJV) Let deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well.

Husband of one wife

As we studied last week, this means to be a "one-woman Man". His eyes and heart and mind are for one woman only, his wife.

Ruling their children

The elder and the deacon, there's a calling to rule their children well, to manage the household. This is a listing of what elders, what deacons, should be in the qualities and the characteristics that they are to have. But there's a deeper meaning here too. I believe it's that you need to take care of the things at home first, before you take care of the things in the church and the ministry. Too often, the pastors or elders or people serving in the church, can get so wrapped up in the ministry that the home life can suffer. The calling here is a balancing call, also is take care of your marriage first, take care of your children first, and then serve in the church, and don't make the kids or the wives feel secondary to the serving and the calling in the church.

(1 Timothy 3:13 NKJV) For those who have served well as deacons obtain for themselves a good standing and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus.

Back to Stephen and Phillip. If you are a deacon and doing it well, you will receive boldness.

The obedient life, serving God, in inwardly and outwardly serving the body of Christ, but serving and living in obedience to the word of God and the way that he called us to live. That obedience brings boldness. When you know that you're right with Christ, and you know that you're living the way he's called you to be, you just live in a confidence, you live in a power, and you find your self just living in a peace because you've been obedient to him. That's the reward, and probably the greatest reward, of being obedient to Christ, and being submissive to Christ, and serving Christ, is there's just the boldness that comes, and a confidence in your life because you know that you're right with the Lord.

I believe one of the greatest reasons about that boldness comes, is there's a tapping and the connecting to the, to the source. To be used by God is to have him flow through you. Therefore, the very God himself, the spirit of God, is flowing through a person who serves, flowing through a person who wants to be obedient and that's power. That's life. That's an abundant life. That's the life that the disciples live. That's John Chapter 10 verse 10, when Jesus said, "I come that they may have life, and that more abundant." This is the life that he's talking about.

John 10:10 (NKJV) ¹⁰ *The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly.*

I just encourage you that there comes a power with being used by God, and stepping out and serving God. It's going to take away from things you'll be doing in the world. It's going to take away from things you could be doing for yourself personally. But the great reward comes, of being a vessel, because the vessel, then, is truly a channel that God occupies and then flows through and pours out onto. You'll get to see just some of the most beautiful things as you're up close and personal, watching God do great and marvelous, loving acts that he does in his church and through his people that open themselves and says, "Here I am, lord."

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² *For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ *Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

Passage: 1 Timothy 3:14-16

Title: The Church, the Pillar and Ground of Truth

1 Timothy 3:14–16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

The Book of Timothy, written around 64-67AD. Paul the aged and experienced apostle writes to the young Pastor Timothy. Timothy traveled with Paul on his second missionary journey, and they had a special bond. Paul as we read in chapter one calls Timothy a true son in the faith.

Their bond was so close that Paul said no one else thinks so much like me than Timothy.

Philippians 2:19–20 (NKJV) ¹⁹ But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy to you shortly, that I also may be encouraged when I know your state. ²⁰ For I have no one like-minded, who will sincerely care for your state.

Paul and Timothy's story begins back in Acts 16 when Paul take him with him on his second missionary journey, and there this special father son relationship begins, and will last until Paul dies.

Acts 16:1–5 (NKJV) ¹ Then he came to Derbe and Lystra. And behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain Jewish woman who believed, but his father was Greek. ² He was well spoken of by the brethren who were at Lystra and Iconium. ³ Paul wanted to have him go on with him. And he took him and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in that region, for they all knew that his father was Greek. ⁴ And as they went through the cities, they delivered to them the decrees to keep, which were determined by the apostles and elders at Jerusalem. ⁵ So the churches were strengthened in the faith, and increased in number daily.

As Paul would establish churches and move on, we read that he would often leave Timothy behind to help those churches in their growth. As we will read this letter, we will see that although Timothy is in leadership, he still struggles with how to handle certain situations, he is still growing in his own maturity, and in leadership. I believe this book is applicable to all of us in some way or another because we are in the ministry in some form or fashion. Some teach bible Studies to adults, others are raising kids, some.....

Paul writes to Timothy so that he may know how the church is to function.

The Theme of this letter:

1 Timothy 3:14–16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

The Outline:

- The Church and its Message – Chapter 1
- The Church and its Members – Chapter 2 & 3
- The Church and its Minister – Chapter 4
- The Church and its Ministry to Itself – Chapter 5
- The Church and its Motives – Chapter 6

Paul will instruct Timothy how the church is function, but understand this, the church is both corporately, and individually. The things taught in this book are for us as a group, the church and its four walls, and for us individually, for we are the temple of God, we are the body of Christ, the sum of individuals make up the whole Church Body.

1 Corinthians 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?

These books (1&2 Timothy and Titus) have been called the Pastoral Epistles. For they help instruct ministers on how to serve in the ministry.

The second theme of this book, is chapter 1, verse 12:

(1 Timothy 1:12 NKJV) And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord who has enabled me, because He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry,

Being in the ministry is a gift from God, not a burden, be thankful to be called. Glean from this book so that you may be a faithful minister.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do His mighty work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Verse 14-15, the theme of this epistle.

(1 Timothy 3:14 NKJV) These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; (1 Timothy 3:15 NKJV) but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.

Verse 15 - Notice conduct yourself in "the house of God" – the word for house (GK: oiko), means the household of God. This is the household of God, we are family here, we are brothers and sisters together in our Father's house. We need to take care of each other, and treat each other as family.

Verse 15 – the church of the living God – the word for church (GK: eklesia), the "called out ones", we are called out from the world unto Him, and unto one another together. And His church is alive, is living it is powerful when we do it together, it becomes the pillar and ground of truth – that is power. We are to gather together publicly and corporately, therefore do not forsake the assembly together... enough of livestreaming, we are not to be alone, but together.)

Hebrews 10:24–25 (NKJV) ²⁴ And let us consider one another in order to stir up love and good works, ²⁵ not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as is the manner of some, but exhorting one another, and so much the more as you see the Day approaching.

Verse 15 – the pillar and ground of truth - Paul is using a word play here because there in Ephesus where Timothy is there was a great temple, The Temple of Artemis or Artemision, also known as the Temple of Diana, was a Greek temple dedicated to an ancient, local form of the goddess Artemis. The temple was one of the Seven Wonders of the World. Begun c. 550 BCE, the marble temple would take 120 years to complete, and like its predecessors, it was dedicated to Artemis and so was sometimes referred to as the Artemisium (or Artemision). Like most temples to the goddess in the Greek world, it was located a short distance from the city as Artemis was thought to preside over boundaries (physical or otherwise), wild vegetation, animals, and nature in general. According to Pliny the Elder in his Natural History (36.97), the temple measured 129.5 metres (425 ft) in length and was 68.6 metres (225 ft) wide, almost double the size of the 5th-century BCE Parthenon at Athens (69.5 x 30.9 m). It had 127 columns which were 18.3 metres (60 ft) high and 1.2 metres (4 ft) in diameter. The columns were arranged in a double row on all four sides, eight or nine on the short sides and 20 or 21 on the long sides. Those columns on the facades were decorated with relief figures from Greek mythology.

The church of the Living God, the pillar and ground of truth. This is the place, the church (I don't just mean this church), is where you can build your life, and be centered and focused for life, so that you may get through life. Remember we are living life backwards, and the church helps us keep that focus that heaven is near, that worst case scenario, we go to heaven.

The church is to be the pillar and ground of truth, and I've made that an outward statement continually, but now let me make it the inward statement, is the pillar and ground of truth of the word, for the word of God is the truth, is the absolute authority. The church cannot be shaken when it comes to the word of God. It can't be, as Ephesians says, caught up in every wind of doctrine. It cannot be blown around. The church must stand on the pillar of truth, and that pillar of truth is the word of God. For, once each church starts to shake on the truth of the word of God, then all the foundational things start to crumble underneath of it. All the foundational things that we can see in our society today begin to crumble. All of the things that we see inside the home as it's supposed to be led by the man, begin to crumble. All the things that each individual is to be as a man/woman of God, begin to crumble. As they crumble because the church crumbled in the world, and the word, then we see the crumbling spreading outward.

This is applicable, this pillar and ground of truth, it needs to be the foundation for what anyone who's going to call themselves a Christian as individuals, and because they are the temple of the living God, the individuals make up the church, but anyone or any organization that identifies as Christian. Every Christian college, every Christian school, every Christian high school, every Christian daycare, if they're going to call themselves Christian, then they need to be the pillar and ground of truth. They cannot crumble or shake on the authority and the validity of the word of God. Any Christian label in the music industry must stand on the pillar and ground of truth. Any Christian artists, whether it's musically or whatever talent that comes with artistic ability, in the Christian designation must stand for the pillar and ground of truth. The movie industry that calls itself Christian must stand on the pillar and ground of truth. If you are a business owner and you identify yourself as a Christian business out on the shepherd's guide or on your business card or on your website, then you need to stand for the pillar and ground of truth. There can be no shaking. There can be no variation. There can be no shadowing. There can be no deviation. Everything must be done exactly in accordance with the word of God.

1 Corinthians 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?

When you do that, you'll be able to sleep good at night. When you do that, no matter how the business, or whatever it is that you're involved in, the ups and downs, you'll be able to rest your head at night and say, "Though the things are hard right now, I know I'm in your will, because I am in your word, and it's the foundation that I'm doing everything on." When things are high, you can say, "It's because you, Lord," and you know what? You can have that boldness and that confidence, and it's because you did what was right. Doesn't make you self-righteous or prosperity doctrine. It just makes you sure that I will bless those who honor my word.

1 Timothy 3:13 (NKJV) ¹³ For those who have served well as deacons obtain for themselves a good standing and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus.

Christianity / Believing – Looks Like Something

So the church is to be the pillar and ground of truth, and just as that temple in Ephesus looked like something, so too is the church. Believers should look like something, specifically... different from the world. The studies we have done in the past are not just how one is to act inside the church, they should be the same person outside the church, whether in the home, in the work place, or in the community wherever that may be. In all that we do we do to bring Him glory, and it is not just in deed but obedience.

- Men, men of prayer, a spirituality about them
- Woman, known for good works, not outward adornment, drawing people to Christ, not themselves.
- Don't be one thing in the church and another thing in the world. Be genuine. We are the (eklesia), the called out ones from the world, not of and like the world.

1 Timothy 2:8-10 (NKJV) ⁸ I desire therefore that the men pray everywhere, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting; ⁹ in like manner also, that the women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with propriety and moderation, not with braided hair or gold or pearls or costly clothing, ¹⁰ but, which is proper for women professing godliness, with good works.

1 Corinthians 10:31 (NKJV) ³¹ Therefore, whether you eat or drink, or whatever you do, do all to the glory of God.

John 15:8 (NKJV) ⁸ By this My Father is glorified, that you bear much fruit; so you will be My disciples.

(1 Timothy 3:16 NKJV) And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

Without controversy – and Jesus has surely been the most controversial person in the history of mankind

The Mystery of godliness – mystery means “hidden truth”, so a mystery is not something that cannot be known, it is something that must be “searched out”. I love that in that we receive Jesus by faith, and then have a whole lifetime to search Him out, dig into the depth of who He is and His great depth. After 30 years, I can honestly say that I am still discovering Him new and afresh continually. I think it is a great request, guarantee to be answered by Him, when we say, Lord take me deeper, I want to know You and Your love more – and He will. Which by the way, is one of the greatest reasons to serve the Lord (as we have been studying here in chapter 3), because we know we need Him to serve the way He calls us to serve, and then to be attached to the Vine (John 15), we draw from Him in a deeper way in knowledge and understanding.

Anytime you have a finite man trying to understand an infinite god, you're going to come to this place of mystery. There's no other way around it. There will be a mystery because the mind can't comprehend and analyze and come to infinite conclusions when it's starting with the finite to work with. There will be a mystery, and great is the mystery, and it's a beautiful mystery, that God's greater than our mind can grasp. That means his love is even greater than the love that we do grasp. And look how great the love is that we grasp, that God gave his only Begotten Son to buy us, to have, us to own us, to make us His own. That's a mystery to me. If I truly look at myself in a mirror and look at my life, and just know my heart on a daily basis, that's a great mystery that God could love me. I love the mysteries of God. But my little finite mind can grasp this, Jesus loves me inside and out.

I tell you what is greatly comforting to me, is that God's bigger than me. He's bigger than I could figure out. He's infinite. That brings me comfort, because then I know what a mighty and awesome powerful God. Not just that I serve, but loves me and serves me.

This verse we finish on the “Hopeful Heart”, if we are honest with ourselves we see how far we fall short on so many areas in this study, but praise the Lord, we can have the hopeful heart, because He has risen, He is seated in Heaven interceding for us, and sends us the Spirit to work in us to conform us into His Image, changing us into His glory.

We all know Romans 8:28,

(Romans 8:28 NKJV) And we know that all things work together for good to those who love God, to those who are the called according to His purpose.

but most don't know 26-27 comes first. When we are weak, when we are beaten down, when we want to quit, God is interceding

(Romans 8:26 NKJV) Likewise the Spirit also helps in our weaknesses. For we do not know what we should pray for as we ought, but the Spirit Himself makes intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.

(Romans 8:27 NKJV) Now He who searches the hearts knows what the mind of the Spirit is, because He makes intercession for the saints according to the will of God.

Also Cross Reference:

(Hebrews 7:24 NKJV) But He, because He continues forever, has an unchangeable priesthood.

(Hebrews 7:25 NKJV) Therefore He is also able to save to the uttermost those who come to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession for them.

You are going to make it because Jesus is praying for you. Don't give up or be discouraged, God is going to come through, have the Hopeful Heart.

Full Cycle

Here we see the full cycle of the life of Christ. God in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, preached, believed upon, and received up.

Manifested in the flesh:

Now Paul doesn't give us a process or procedure on how to become these things, instead he gives us a person, the incarnate God who came down to dwell with us. The Word, the Pillar and Foundation, became flesh and dwelt among us.

John 1:1-2 (NKJV) ¹ In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. ² He was in the beginning with God.

John 1:14 (NKJV) ¹⁴ And the Word became flesh and dwelt among us, and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth.

The Cults will make Jesus less than God. The Jehovah Witnesses will say He is not God but an archangel. The Mormons will say that Jesus and Satan are brothers. But the Word of God says God Himself left the throne, and walked amongst men, so that He may show men how to walk here on earth, and the way the truth and the life.

John 14:6 (NKJV) ⁶ Jesus said to him, "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me.

Great is the mystery: trying to explain God is like trying to take the Atlantic Ocean and pour it into a bucket – Augustine. I thank God that my God is big enough to be a mystery! For now I know He is big enough for my every need today, and my greatest need of salvation.

Isaiah 9:6-7, "Unto you" (don't miss the "you"), He is Jesus God's gift to you. I love it at the Sight and Sound theatre in Lancaster, the "Miracle of Christmas", and every time someone came to Mary and Child, whether shepherds, or wise men, she would present Child to them and say, "This is Jesus, God's Gift to you". So today, He is Jesus, God's gift to you. Receive Him today as a gift, give yourself a gift today, the greatest gift, the gift above all gifts, God Himself given to you. He will be all these things to you, wonderful, counselor, the Mighty God, everlasting and never leaving, a Father (regardless of what your earthly father may be or have been to you), and Peace, He will bring you a peace that passes all humanly understanding.

Luke 2:8-14 (NKJV) ⁸ Now there were in the same country shepherds living out in the fields, keeping watch over their flock by night. ⁹ And behold, an angel of the Lord stood before them, and the glory of the Lord shone around them, and they were greatly afraid. ¹⁰ Then the angel said to them, "Do not be afraid, for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy which will be to all people. ¹¹ For there is born to you this day in the city of David a Savior, who is Christ the Lord. ¹² And this will be the sign to you: You will find a Babe wrapped in swaddling cloths, lying in a manger." ¹³ And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God and saying: ¹⁴ "Glory to God in the highest, And on earth peace, goodwill toward men!"

Isaiah 9:6-7 (NKJV) ⁶ For unto us a Child is born, Unto us a Son is given; And the government will be upon His shoulder. And His name will be called Wonderful, Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace. ⁷ Of the increase of His government and peace There will be no end, Upon the throne of David and over His kingdom, To order it and establish it with judgment and justice From that time forward, even forever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.

Philippians 4:6-7 (NKJV) ⁶ Be anxious for nothing, but in everything by prayer and supplication, with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known to God; ⁷ and the peace of God, which surpasses all understanding, will guard your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.

Justified in the Spirit

Jesus was justified in the Spirit when, following His baptism in the Jordan River, the Holy Spirit came upon Him in the form of a dove (Matthew 3:16). When He was thus empowered for service, His public ministry began and miracles followed. The same holds true for you. Just as anything

you want to know about godliness can be seen in the Person of Jesus Christ, whatever you accomplish in ministry will be done solely through the power of the Holy Spirit.

Matthew 3:16–17 (NKJV) ¹⁶ When He had been baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened to Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and alighting upon Him. ¹⁷ And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."

Seen by angels

When a bright light shines in your eyes, you instinctively shield your face. Can you imagine the brightness of He who is light? Thus, it is highly possible that angels never saw God before the Incarnation. Only when He became a Man could they look at Him. And so can we

Luke 2:8–14 (NKJV) ⁸ Now there were in the same country shepherds living out in the fields, keeping watch over their flock by night. ⁹ And behold, an angel of the Lord stood before them, and the glory of the Lord shone around them, and they were greatly afraid. ¹⁰ Then the angel said to them, "Do not be afraid, for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy which will be to all people. ¹¹ For there is born to you this day in the city of David a Savior, who is Christ the Lord. ¹² And this will be the sign to you: You will find a Babe wrapped in swaddling cloths, lying in a manger." ¹³ And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God and saying: ¹⁴ "Glory to God in the highest, And on earth peace, goodwill toward men!"

Following His baptism, Jesus was led to the wilderness, where He was tempted by Satan with the same temptations that bug, plague, and hassle you. At the end of forty days, Jesus was victorious and was ministered to by angels (Matthew 4:11).

Matthew 4:11 (NKJV) ¹¹ Then the devil left Him, and behold, angels came and ministered to Him.

He was seen by angels, or maybe not.... All they could testify to was that you won't see Him here, in this tomb, for the tomb is empty, because He is risen and alive!

Matthew 28:5–7 (NKJV) ⁵ But the angel answered and said to the women, "Do not be afraid, for I know that you seek Jesus who was crucified. ⁶ He is not here; for He is risen, as He said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay. ⁷ And go quickly and tell His disciples that He is risen from the dead, and indeed He is going before you into Galilee; there you will see Him. Behold, I have told you."

Preached among the Gentiles

At a time when Gentiles were considered by Jews to be nothing more than fuel for the fires of hell, Jesus not only talked to Gentiles, but commended them uniquely. So, too, you might feel like the least likely candidate to deserve a word from Jesus. Take heart! He marvels at the faith of people like you!

Listen church, be set free.....Paul says in Colossians, "Him I preached." He doesn't preach theology. He preaches a person. We don't come here to study a theology, and that's what the word means, theo, God, ology, study, study of God. We come here to study a person who is Jesus Christ, the expressed image of God, Verse 15, that we studied. That's who we come to study. And as we study the person, we are also therefore then studying God, we're studying theology. Because out of the person comes the theology, the doctrine, it's based on a person, the person's not based on a doctrine. And the difference about that is He's not an intellectual study. He's a personal, intimate study that passes understanding and explodes in our hearts as we explore Him and all that He is. And as we studied, if we want to know the heart of God, we look at the life of Jesus. He is the expressed image of God.

Colossians 1:27–28 (NKJV) ²⁷ To them God willed to make known what are the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles: which is Christ in you, the hope of glory. ²⁸ Him we preach, warning every man and teaching every man in all wisdom, that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus.

In Matthew 10 when Jesus sends the disciples out, He says go to Israel, the Jews first. Tell them the kingdom of heaven is at hand. Tell them the King has come. The Greek word for preach is kerusso, it means "to sing out. That's the word for preach. Sing it out. Sing out the gospel! God has given us a new song, in our hearts to sing, a new song, praises for the King. Don't turn sharing into some crybaby cowboy song where the dog dies, the girlfriend leaves, and the ranch burns down. This gospel, this song, is a wonderful, it is a joy to be alive, love song. Present it as such we you share it. It isn't I got bad news you are going to hell, but I have great news heaven's doors have been opened for you, let me tell ya how to walk through them.

Matthew 10:5-7 (NKJV) ⁵ These twelve Jesus sent out and commanded them, saying: "Do not go into the way of the Gentiles, and do not enter a city of the Samaritans. ⁶ But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. ⁷ And as you go, preach, saying, 'The kingdom of heaven is at hand.'

George Whitefield one of the men used mightily by the Lord in the Great Awakening in this Country. The Great Awakening was a religious revival that impacted the English colonies in America during the 1730s and 1740s. The movement came at a time when the idea of secular rationalism was being emphasized, and passion for religion had grown stale.

He said: *Other men may preach the gospel better than I, but no man can preach a better gospel*

Folks, we have the greatest news in the world, and our world, our Country needs it now! Don't worry about how well you can preach, just sing it out from your heart, and let the Lord take it from there.

Believed on in the world

"Truly this was the Son of God," the centurion proclaimed as He saw Jesus on the Cross (Matthew 27:54). Believed on by the centurion who stood below Him and by the thief who hung beside Him, Jesus was further believed on by the hundreds who were eyewitnesses of His resurrection (1 Cor 15:1-8).

Matthew 27:54 (NKJV) ⁵⁴ So when the centurion and those with him, who were guarding Jesus, saw the earthquake and the things that had happened, they feared greatly, saying, "Truly this was the Son of God!"

1 Corinthians 15:1-8 (NKJV) ¹ Moreover, brethren, I declare to you the gospel which I preached to you, which also you received and in which you stand, ² by which also you are saved, if you hold fast that word which I preached to you— unless you believed in vain. ³ For I delivered to you first of all that which I also received: that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures, ⁴ and that He was buried, and that He rose again the third day according to the Scriptures, ⁵ and that He was seen by Cephas, then by the twelve. ⁶ After that He was seen by over five hundred brethren at once, of whom the greater part remain to the present, but some have fallen asleep. ⁷ After that He was seen by James, then by all the apostles. ⁸ Then last of all He was seen by me also, as by one born out of due time.

And now here today, here we are believing unto Him, the Child that was given.

Received up in Glory

This reminds us of Jesus' ascension (Luke 24:51), His finished work on our behalf (Hebrews 1:3), and His present intercession for us (1 John 2:1).

Luke 24:49-53 (NKJV) ⁴⁹ "Behold, I send the Promise of My Father upon you; but tarry in the city of Jerusalem until you are endued with power from on high." ⁵⁰ And He led them out as far as Bethany, and He lifted up His hands and blessed them. ⁵¹ Now it came to pass, while He blessed them, that He was parted from them and carried up into heaven. ⁵² And they worshiped Him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy, ⁵³ and were continually in the temple praising and blessing God. Amen.

Hebrews 1:1-4 (NKJV) ¹ God, who at various times and in various ways spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets, ² has in these last days spoken to us by His Son, whom He has appointed heir of all things, through whom also He made the worlds; ³ who being the brightness of His glory and the express image of His person, and upholding all things by the word of His power, when He had by Himself purged our sins, sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high, ⁴ having become so much better than the angels, as He has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.

1 John 2:1-2 (NKJV) ¹ My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. ² And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world.

Jesus is in heaven where He lives to make intercession for you and me (Hebrews 7:25). In other words, Jesus went to heaven where He's talking to the Father nonstop about you.

Hebrews 7:25 (NKJV) ²⁵ Therefore He is also able to save to the uttermost those who come to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession for them.

And here is why I can say all these things for sure, and the certainty of them, for the resurrection and ascension, are the power of the Gospel, they prove that God accepted the substitution/trade (propitiation). Anyone can die, Muhammad dies, Buddha died, Krishna died, but only Jesus died and rose again.

1 John 2:1–2 (NKJV) ¹ My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. ² And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world.

It is proof the God accepted the trade, of Jesus taking our sin and punishment as the “Lamb of God who would take away the sin of the world”, that our sins would be buried as far as the east is from the west and God would remember them no more. The resurrection and ascension of Jesus into Glory is the power of the Gospel!

John 1:29 (NKJV) ²⁹ The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him, and said, “Behold! The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!

Psalms 103:12 (NKJV) ¹² As far as the east is from the west, So far has He removed our transgressions from us.

Hebrews 10:16–17 (NKJV) ¹⁶ “This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, says the LORD: I will put My laws into their hearts, and in their minds I will write them,” ¹⁷ then He adds, “Their sins and their lawless deeds I will remember no more.”

And that is why, nothing therefore can separate us from the love of Christ:

Romans 8:31–39 (NKJV) ³¹ What then shall we say to these things? If God is for us, who can be against us? ³² He who did not spare His own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how shall He not with Him also freely give us all things? ³³ Who shall bring a charge against God’s elect? It is God who justifies. ³⁴ Who is he who condemns? It is Christ who died, and furthermore is also risen, who is even at the right hand of God, who also makes intercession for us. ³⁵ Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? ³⁶ As it is written: “For Your sake we are killed all day long; We are accounted as sheep for the slaughter.” ³⁷ Yet in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him who loved us. ³⁸ For I am persuaded that neither death nor life, nor angels nor principalities nor powers, nor things present nor things to come, ³⁹ nor height nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

Conclusion / Communion

Study the gospels and you will see how God Himself handled situations, he walked, as we are to walk, everything you need to know about God is in this Word, and everything you need to know about life for us is in this Word.

Apply these things, let your heart be searchable that the Spirit may move in your heart to make us all these things, that we will be pleasing in His sight. That He will work out in us what He wills for us.

1 Corinthians 11:23–26 (NKJV) ²³ For I received from the Lord that which I also delivered to you: that the Lord Jesus on the *same* night in which He was betrayed took bread; ²⁴ and when He had given thanks, He broke *it* and said, “Take, eat; this is My body which is broken for you; do this in remembrance of Me.” ²⁵ In the same manner *He* also took the cup after supper, saying, “This cup is the new covenant in My blood. This do, as often as you drink *it*, in remembrance of Me.” ²⁶ For as often as you eat this bread and drink this cup, you proclaim the Lord’s death till He comes.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Chapter 4

Passage: 1 Timothy 4:1-5

Title: Some Will Depart from the Faith

1 Timothy 4:1-5 (NKJV) ¹ Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons, ² speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron, ³ forbidding to marry, and *commanding* to abstain from foods which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and know the truth. ⁴ For every creature of God *is* good, and nothing is to be refused if it is received with thanksgiving; ⁵ for it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.

The Book of Timothy, written around 64-67AD. Paul the aged and experienced apostle writes to the young Pastor Timothy. Timothy traveled with Paul on his second missionary journey, and they had a special bond. Paul as we read in chapter one calls Timothy a true son in the faith.

Their bond was so close that Paul said no one else thinks so much like me than Timothy.

Philippians 2:19-20 (NKJV) ¹⁹ But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy to you shortly, that I also may be encouraged when I know your state. ²⁰ For I have no one like-minded, who will sincerely care for your state.

Paul and Timothy's story begins back in Acts 16 when Paul take him with him on his second missionary journey, and there this special father son relationship begins, and will last until Paul dies.

Acts 16:1-5 (NKJV) ¹ Then he came to Derbe and Lystra. And behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain Jewish woman who believed, but his father was Greek. ² He was well spoken of by the brethren who were at Lystra and Iconium. ³ Paul wanted to have him go on with him. And he took him and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in that region, for they all knew that his father was Greek. ⁴ And as they went through the cities, they delivered to them the decrees to keep, which were determined by the apostles and elders at Jerusalem. ⁵ So the churches were strengthened in the faith, and increased in number daily.

As Paul would establish churches and move on, we read that he would often leave Timothy behind to help those churches in their growth. As we will read this letter, we will see that although Timothy is in leadership, he still struggles with how to handle certain situations, he is still growing in his own maturity, and in leadership. I believe this book is applicable to all of us in some way or another because we are in the ministry in some form or fashion. Some teach bible Studies to adults, others are raising kids, some.....

Paul writes to Timothy so that he may know how the church is to function.

The Theme of this letter:

1 Timothy 3:14-16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

The Outline:

- The Church and its Message – Chapter 1
- The Church and its Members – Chapter 2 & 3
- The Church and its Minister – Chapter 4
- The Church and its Ministry to Itself – Chapter 5
- The Church and its Motives – Chapter 6

Paul will instruct Timothy how the church is function, but understand this, the church is both corporately, and individually. The things taught in this book are for us as a group, the church and its four walls, and for us individually, for we are the temple of God, we are the body of Christ, the sum of individuals make up the whole Church Body.

1 Corinthians 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?

These books (1&2 Timothy and Titus) have been called the Pastoral Epistles. For they help instruct ministers on how to serve in the ministry.

The second theme of this book, is chapter 1, verse 12:

(1 Timothy 1:12 NKJV) And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord who has enabled me, because He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry,

Being in the ministry is a gift from God, not a burden, be thankful to be called. Glean from this book so that you may be a faithful minister.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

So, First Timothy, chapter 4: The Church and It's Minister.

We ended chapter 3 with verse 16:

1 Timothy 3:14–16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

And begin chapter 4 with:

1 Timothy 4:1–2 (NKJV) ¹ Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons, ² speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron,

In the first three chapters of his letter, Paul tells Timothy to use the Bible biblically - stand up for sound doctrine - fight the fight of faith. He says elders should be "apt to teach" - and He calls the church "the pillar and ground of the truth." Why all this emphasis on right doctrine? Because the closer we get to the last days, false teaching will abound. It's a shock to a new Christian to realize not every so-called "Bible teacher" really teaches the Bible. Some speak "lies in hypocrisy."

Realize not everything labeled "spiritual" is godly or biblical. Walk into the "Religion and Spirituality" section at a Barnes and Noble Bookstore, and you'll find books by Max Lucado and the Dalai Lama on the same shelf! Today's world is fascinated with all things "spiritual." Paul tells Timothy there are "deceiving spirits" in the world, and demons spewing doctrine. When Satan fell, a third of the angels joined his revolt. These angels are spiritual, but they're "deceiving spirits" who inspire false doctrine. Their goal is for us to "depart from the faith."

1 Timothy 4:1 (NKJV) 1 Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons,

Now the Spirit expressly says

Expressly, means to pour forth clearly. The Spirit of God poured forth clearly this prophecy. In the Old Testament, a large portion is devoted to prophecy; but we also have prophecy in the New Testament and here is an instance of the Spirit speaking expressly, *“that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron.”*

says that in latter times

The word “latter days” used here means “wave after wave, until the end comes”. There will be a continual wave of these things getting worse and worse until the final end of the end. The word here means these things are already here, but they will continual to get worse and worse (aka – like waves, they will just keep coming), wave after wave, until the final (hurricane – if you would – of the last days).

People, things are not going to get better and better, but worse and worse. We must live everyday with this perspective. Paul is telling Timothy it is not going to be easy to be a minister in the last days. Whatever leadership role you are in today, it isn't easy is it, you have so much coming against you, so much to counter from the world.

Timothy, remain in Ephesus (a very specific location and do a very specific thing. Christian you must remain in this truth we are studying, guard it with your very life lest you be swept away.

1 Timothy 1:3–4 (NKJV) ³ As I urged you when I went into Macedonia—remain in Ephesus that you may charge some that they teach no other doctrine, ⁴ nor give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which cause disputes rather than godly edification which is in faith.

some will depart from the faith

Those who depart from the faith are not the heretical teachers of 1:3, but those whom they mislead (Vincent). The word “depart” is *aphistēmi* (ἀφίστημι), “to stand off from, to fall away.” Our word “apostatize” is the English spelling of a form of the Greek word. The definite article before the word “faith” marks it out as speaking, not of faith as an act, but of the Faith, that body of doctrine which forms the basis of what we as Christians believe.

Wuest, K. S. (1997). Wuest's word studies from the Greek New Testament: for the English reader (Vol. 7, p. 66). Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.

giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons,

Just as God has a doctrine, so does Satan. This doctrine is anything that draws a person away from God. This doctrine today is so alluring because of the promises of success that comes with it. There is a war going on between the kingdom of God and Satan.

John 10:10 (NKJV) ¹⁰ The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly.

Of course, the question that you have to ask when you read this opening verse, can someone lose their salvation? For 2000 years the debate has raged, can a man lose his salvation.

John 10:28–29 (NKJV) ²⁸ And I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; neither shall anyone snatch them out of My hand. ²⁹ My Father, who has given them to Me, is greater than all; and no one is able to snatch them out of My Father's hand.

And this verse:

1 Timothy 4:1 (NKJV) ¹ Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons,

Or

(1 John 1:9 NKJV) If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

Or

1 Corinthians 6:9–11 (NKJV) ⁹ Do you not know that the unrighteous will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived. Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor homosexuals, nor sodomites, ¹⁰ nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners will inherit the kingdom of God. ¹¹ And such were some of you. But you were washed, but you were sanctified, but you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus and by the Spirit of our God.

But again,

Those who depart from the faith are not the heretical teachers of 1:3, but those whom they mislead (Vincent). The word “depart” is *aphistēmi* (ἀφίστημι), “to stand off from, to fall away.” Our word “apostatize” is the English spelling of a form of the Greek word. The definite article before the word “faith” marks it out as speaking, not of faith as an act, but of the Faith, that body of doctrine which forms the basis of what we as Christians believe.

Wuest, K. S. (1997). *Wuest's word studies from the Greek New Testament: for the English reader* (Vol. 7, p. 66). Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.

1 Timothy 4:1 (NKJV) ¹ Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons,

It is what it says, and every Christian should be concerned that is what it says, because what it is saying is a Christian can buy into all the lies and deception of the Devil, and “depart” from “THE” faith.

A few months ago I flew out to Nevada, and to get there I flew out of Baltimore Washington International Airport (BWI). I departed from Gate D26 of concourse D, on Southwest Airlines. I departed from a very specific location (BWI Gate D26), and went to another very specific location (Las Vegas International Airport). I didn't depart from Cincinnati, I did not depart from Philadelphia, I departed from Baltimore specifically. It cannot be said that I departed from anywhere else than Baltimore, yet some will try to say here in this passage that the person was never really a believer, they were never in “THE” faith, they merely made a profession with their words, but not in their heart.

The word used here in (1 Timothy 4:1), is very specific, “The Faith”. I have no problem simply reading the passage, and reading it for what it says, and saying that is what it means.

And now as a minister of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, a teacher of the Word of God, doing what God said for the pastor/teacher to do, to teach and to warn.

Timothy, remain in Ephesus (a very specific location and do a very specific thing

1 Timothy 1:3–4 (NKJV) ³ As I urged you when I went into Macedonia—remain in Ephesus that you may charge some that they teach no other doctrine, ⁴ nor give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which cause disputes rather than godly edification which is in faith.

We will read in this chapter, that God will give the church 2 things to guard themselves from these deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons.....the Word of God, and strong Godly leadership.

1.) **the Word of God** – Wall #1 between the enemy and God's children's

(1 Timothy 4:6 NKJV) If you instruct the brethren in these things, you will be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished in the words of faith and of the good doctrine which you have carefully followed.

(1 Timothy 4:11 NKJV) These things command and teach.

(1 Timothy 4:13 NKJV) Till I come, give attention to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.

(1 Timothy 4:16 NKJV) Take heed to yourself and to the doctrine. Continue in them, for in doing this you will save both yourself and those who hear you.

2.) **Strong Godly Leadership** – Wall #2 between the enemy and God’s children’s

(1 Timothy 4:6 NKJV) If you instruct the brethren in these things, you will be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished in the words of faith and of the good doctrine which you have carefully followed.

(1 Timothy 4:12 NKJV) Let no one despise your youth, but be an example to the believers in word, in conduct, in love, in spirit, in faith, in purity.

(1 Timothy 4:15 NKJV) Meditate on these things; give yourself entirely to them, that your progress may be evident to all.

(1 Timothy 4:16 NKJV) Take heed to yourself and to the doctrine. Continue in them, for in doing this you will save both yourself and those who hear you.

(1 Timothy 4:2 NKJV) speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron,

And here’s Satan’s advantage in the battle - he lies shamelessly. Demonically-inspired teachers tell people what they want to hear or what they’d like for you to hear. Unlike God, Satan has no obligation to the truth. This is why Paul says of these demonically-inspired teachers “having their own conscience seared with a hot iron...” They’ve lost any integrity or fidelity to truth. Their conscience has been cauterized or desensitized. These teachers are no longer governed by sacred Scripture, let alone God’s Holy Spirit. They’re governed by political correctness, not theological accuracy.

John 8:44 (NKJV) ⁴⁴ You are of your father the devil, and the desires of your father you want to do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own resources, for he is a liar and the father of it.

(1 Timothy 4:3 NKJV) forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from foods which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and know the truth.

And in the next few verses, Paul provides a rundown of what these false teachers emphasize... “forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from foods which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and know the truth.” From food to sex - the false teacher forbids what God considers to be good.

Mormons don’t drink coffee, but God created coffee beans... Seventh-day Adventists are vegetarian, but God created meat - beef and sausage and bacon! Roman Catholicism denies its priests the opportunity to marry and enjoy healthy sexual intimacy - and it puts undue pressure on the priests... When God created beans, and meat, and sex... He said that it was good! There are a near billion of people following Eastern Mysticism (predominately in India), who view cows as sacred therefore cannot eat them (forbidden food) – remind you the religion of the last-last days is not religion less, it is just “Christless”, from there anything goes, as long as it is not the narrow way through the cross, the only way, the one way.

John 14:6 (NKJV) ⁶ Jesus said to him, “I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me.

Matthew 7:13–20 (NKJV) ¹³ “Enter by the narrow gate; for wide is the gate and broad is the way that leads to destruction, and there are many who go in by it. ¹⁴ Because narrow is the gate and difficult is the way which leads to life, and there are few who find it. ¹⁵ “Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep’s clothing, but inwardly they are ravenous wolves. ¹⁶ You will know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes from thornbushes or figs from thistles? ¹⁷ Even so, every good tree bears good fruit, but a bad tree bears bad fruit. ¹⁸ A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, nor can a bad tree bear good fruit. ¹⁹ Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. ²⁰ Therefore by their fruits you will know them.

Regarding withholding, God hasn’t changed His mind! You please God not through abstinence, but by thanking God for His many blessings and then using them for His glory.

Holiness isn’t about what I can sacrifice for God, it’s about what He sacrificed to save me! Biblical spirituality involves the work of Jesus on the cross, and the work of the Spirit in my heart, not self-deprivation.

In Colossians, we studied a heretical doctrine known as “Gnosticism.” It taught strange forms of asceticism. Asceticism is the attempt to please God and grow spiritually through self-denial. Yet Paul couldn’t have disagreed more! We become more spiritual, not through the denial of God-given pleasures, but through faith in Jesus and the Holy Spirit at work on my behalf.

But as we have studied, the attack upon marriage in the last days will be about the destruction of the picture of marriage, between a man and woman, which is a picture of the Gospel, God seeking a Bride for His Son.

Ephesians 5:30–32 (NKJV) ³⁰ For we are members of His body, of His flesh and of His bones. ³¹ “For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh.” ³² This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the church.

In contrast to self-deprivation, verse 4 encourages us to enjoy what God created.

(1 Timothy 4:4 NKJV) For every creature of God is good, and nothing is to be refused if it is received with thanksgiving;

(1 Timothy 4:5 NKJV) for it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.

In the proper context, there’s nothing God created that we can’t enjoy for His glory. God created life’s pleasures and we’re free to enjoy them if our doing so enhances our gratitude for God and dedication to God.

Revelation 4:9–11 (NKJV) ⁹ Whenever the living creatures give glory and honor and thanks to Him who sits on the throne, who lives forever and ever, ¹⁰ the twenty-four elders fall down before Him who sits on the throne and worship Him who lives forever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying: ¹¹ “You are worthy, O Lord, To receive glory and honor and power; For You created all things, And by Your will they exist and were created.”

“Sanctified by the Word of God and ~ What a blessed thing it is when the Word of God is honored and the voice of prayer ascends to heaven, as the family gathers about the table to enjoy the good things the Lord has provided. Many of us look back on such scenes of family worship, and how we thank God for the impressions made upon our hearts and lives in early days.

Verse 5 is a key to unlocking this whole passage, the deception and gradual sliding of some in the church into apostasy, and it is these two words “word and prayer”.

Just keep it that simply Christian, and you will stay strong and finish well – the Word and Prayer!

Communion

1 Corinthians 11:23–26 (NKJV) ²³ For I received from the Lord that which I also delivered to you: that the Lord Jesus on the *same* night in which He was betrayed took bread; ²⁴ and when He had given thanks, He broke *it* and said, “Take, eat; this is My body which is broken for you; do this in remembrance of Me.” ²⁵ In the same manner *He* also took the cup after supper, saying, “This cup is the new covenant in My blood. This do, as often as you drink *it*, in remembrance of Me.” ²⁶ For as often as you eat this bread and drink this cup, you proclaim the Lord’s death till He comes.

30 Years Ago

Thirty years ago I bought a Bible at the bookstore, and every night there in my bedroom I read it for hours, totally consumed by it. I started in Genesis and read straight through (book-by-book, chapter-by-chapter, verse-by-verse). It became clear to me early on, that my sin separated me from the holy God. Then I came to the gospels and as I read them I saw that God loved me and then he died for me. God loves me, God loves you, that He “gave” His Only Begotten Son for me, and for you.

Thirty years later my doctrine and theology is as deep today as it was then (there in my bedroom) – Jesus loves me this I know, because the Bible tells me so. I am not trying to be funny or cute, I am literally of the depths of truths and the deepest doctrine and the deepest theology and that is God loves me and it is that simple because the Bible says he does and I 30 years later just keep it that simple.

In that simplicity

- I can say no to the flash because I know my Lord loves me and only desires the best for me and I trust his word because he said it and he said it to protect me from harm and to provide for me the best I can have.
- And in that simplicity, I can get up even after I totally blew it because of my selfishness and myself desires, but still get up knowing that I can come back to him and be fully received and fully loved even sympathy from him that I was so foolish to do search things. And I can say Lord you were right as always and holy is your ways so much wiser in the world in my flesh.
- And in that simplicity, I can love, I can love the saved and the unsaved, even the person, or the people that hurt me because His love dwells in me because He dwells in me. That is powerful love, a love that can forgive, and a love that can receive forgiveness

Why, Luke 7 (main point of story: whoever is forgiven much loves much), and in that story tells us why we can forgive, and receive forgiveness, and it is truly deeper than the surface reveals, and it relevant to our verse before us today. Let's read it.

Luke 7:36–50 (NKJV) ³⁶ Then one of the Pharisees asked Him to eat with him. And He went to the Pharisee's house, and sat down to eat. ³⁷ And behold, a woman in the city who was a sinner, when she knew that Jesus sat at the table in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster flask of fragrant oil, ³⁸ and stood at His feet behind Him weeping; and she began to wash His feet with her tears, and wiped them with the hair of her head; and she kissed His feet and anointed them with the fragrant oil. ³⁹ Now when the Pharisee who had invited Him saw this, he spoke to himself, saying, "This Man, if He were a prophet, would know who and what manner of woman this is who is touching Him, for she is a sinner." ⁴⁰ And Jesus answered and said to him, "Simon, I have something to say to you." So he said, "Teacher, say it." ⁴¹ "There was a certain creditor who had two debtors. One owed five hundred denarii, and the other fifty." ⁴² And when they had nothing with which to repay, he freely forgave them both. Tell Me, therefore, which of them will love him more?" ⁴³ Simon answered and said, "I suppose the one whom he forgave more." And He said to him, "You have rightly judged." ⁴⁴ Then He turned to the woman and said to Simon, "Do you see this woman? I entered your house; you gave Me no water for My feet, but she has washed My feet with her tears and wiped them with the hair of her head. ⁴⁵ You gave Me no kiss, but this woman has not ceased to kiss My feet since the time I came in. ⁴⁶ You did not anoint My head with oil, but this woman has anointed My feet with fragrant oil." ⁴⁷ Therefore I say to you, her sins, which are many, are forgiven, for she loved much. But to whom little is forgiven, the same loves little." ⁴⁸ Then He said to her, "Your sins are forgiven." ⁴⁹ And those who sat at the table with Him began to say to themselves, "Who is this who even forgives sins?" ⁵⁰ Then He said to the woman, "Your faith has saved you. Go in peace."

The woman knew she was a sinner, and she knew she was forgiven, and her experiential knowledge of being forgiven (forgiven: means to send away), and knowing her sin was sent away, she knew that His love does not send her away, but because of love, sin is sent away, but the sinner is called in, drawn in, came come unto Him. This truth is true, because the Bible tells us so.

But is it not interesting, and the building on why it is relevant to our passage today, how people with religion can see themselves so righteous as they look upon at others. These men look upon this woman who understands forgiveness, the greatness of the One (Jesus – God) and His heart desire to forgive, she comes and worships (which means worthiness) Him, but the rest of the room looks on in judgement.

Every person is given the opportunity to be forgiven much, for every person has sinned much, thus every person is given the opportunity to "love much", the Lord and others. Notice this men have no love, neither for this woman, nor for Jesus. James 2:10 says, one sin, any sin, makes all guilty, and equally guilty, because in God's perfect holiness, one sin is as offensive and guilty before Him as any other.

James 2:10 (NKJV) ¹⁰ For whoever shall keep the whole law, and yet stumble in one point, he is guilty of all.

Communion

1 Corinthians 11:23–26 (NKJV) ²³ For I received from the Lord that which I also delivered to you: that the Lord Jesus on the same night in which He was betrayed took bread; ²⁴ and when He had given thanks, He broke it and said, "Take, eat; this is My body which is broken for you; do this in remembrance of Me." ²⁵ In the same manner He also took the cup after supper, saying, "This cup

is the new covenant in My blood. This do, as often as you drink *it*, in remembrance of Me.”²⁶ For as often as you eat this bread and drink this cup, you proclaim the Lord’s death till He comes.

Notice the two things of communion for us today, the looking back on what Christ has done, and the looking forward (prophetically) that He is coming back for us.

Here is the way to

Foolproof your salvation, that is not to be fooled or deceived by the Devil and his lies, and deceit; and to Fireproof your salvation, as God’s fire comes down and destroys the devils lies and deceit? You hold in your hand, the depth of theology, these communion elements of the bread and the cup..... Jesus loves me this I know

As I hold a picture of His body and blood in my hand, I see a solidified position of I am His and He is mine, to which I can say no one can snatch Him out of my hands, and He says the same of me that no one can snatch me out of His hands, and I say my Shepherd hears my voice, to which He says to me and My sheep hear My voice:

*John 10:27–30 (NKJV)*²⁷ My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me. ²⁸ And I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; neither shall anyone snatch them out of My hand. ²⁹ My Father, who has given them to Me, is greater than all; and no one is able to snatch them out of My Father’s hand. ³⁰ I and My Father are one.”

Communion I come back to His hands, nailed scarred hands, the hands that were wounded and scarred before the foundation of the world, and into all of eternity:

*Revelation 13:8 (NKJV)*⁸ All who dwell on the earth will worship him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

*Ephesians 1:4 (NKJV)*⁴ just as He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love,

*Revelation 5:6 (NKJV)*⁶ And I looked, and behold, in the midst of the throne and of the four living creatures, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as though it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent out into all the earth.

And here is what comes out of communion: stability and strength.

In 1 Kings 7 we read the making of the two pillars that were at the entrance into the Temple in Jerusalem. Of course the words pillar and truth and temple all take us back to last week’s study, of the church being the pillar and ground of truth. The two pillars were named, Jachin, and the other Boaz. Jachin means stability, and Boaz means strength. I believe the Lord sent a message to all who would come to the Temple, pass through the pillars and come into the Temple, and a word that still would speak to us today..... when you come into, pass through, you will find stability and strength.

*1 Timothy 3:14–15 (NKJV)*¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.

*1 Kings 7:15–22 (NKJV)*¹⁵ And he cast two pillars of bronze, each one eighteen cubits high, and a line of twelve cubits measured the circumference of each. ¹⁶ Then he made two capitals of cast bronze, to set on the tops of the pillars. The height of one capital was five cubits, and the height of the other capital was five cubits. ¹⁷ He made a lattice network, with wreaths of chainwork, for the capitals which were on top of the pillars: seven chains for one capital and seven for the other capital. ¹⁸ So he made the pillars, and two rows of pomegranates above the network all around to cover the capitals that were on top; and thus he did for the other capital. ¹⁹ The capitals which were on top of the pillars in the hall were in the shape of lilies, four cubits. ²⁰ The capitals on the two pillars also had pomegranates above, by the convex surface which was next to the network; and there were two hundred such pomegranates in rows on each of the capitals all around. ²¹ Then he set up the pillars by the vestibule of the temple; he set up the pillar on the right and called its name Jachin, and he set up the pillar on the left and called its name Boaz. ²² The tops of the pillars were in the shape of lilies. So the work of the pillars was finished.

As we read of the beautiful artistic artwork of these pillars I am intrigued by how the greatest artwork was all the way at the top (some 27 feet high), to which the person coming to the temple would not see that depth of the artistic work from looking upward. Looking from above is what we call a birds-eye view, but people of faith call it Gods-eye view, and when God looks at His people

entering into the Temple (the Church), passing through the pillars, it is pure beauty to Him. And I find it interesting as I was in Jerusalem last year, up on the Mount of Olives, the place Jesus went to pray and weep and determine to go to the cross, that from that level, you are looking down on the Temple Mount, meaning you would find yourself at God's-eye view. Jesus would look at the Temple, the place of sacrifice, and determine to be the final sacrifice for the sin of man. There was and is a beauty in the sacrificial system,

*John 1:29 (NKJV)*²⁹ *The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him, and said, "Behold! The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!"*

Why will people depart from the faith?

- They will follow the doctrine of demons – which goes all the way back to the garden of creation where Satan would attack the Word of God by saying did God really say (Genesis 3)
- People will forsake the assembly of the brethren, the fellowship of the believers and the word (Hebrews 10:25)
- And the ultimate attack, will be upon the Temple, in regards to the sacrificial system, that God would take away a man's sin, because every sin is an offense to the Holy God.
- And fourthly, men will leave prayer, and thus they will have disconnected from the Word of God, the assembly of the brethren, forgetting the sacrifice that was paid for them, and then prayer, because they have forsaken the assembly of brethren, and Jesus said "My house shall be called a house of prayer".

*Genesis 3:1–5 (NKJV)*¹ *Now the serpent was more cunning than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said to the woman, "Has God indeed said, "You shall not eat of every tree of the garden?"*² *And the woman said to the serpent, "We may eat the fruit of the trees of the garden; ³ but of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God has said, "You shall not eat it, nor shall you touch it, lest you die."*⁴ *Then the serpent said to the woman, "You will not surely die. ⁵ For God knows that in the day you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil."*

*Hebrews 10:24–25 (NKJV)*²⁴ *And let us consider one another in order to stir up love and good works, ²⁵ not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as is the manner of some, but exhorting one another, and so much the more as you see the Day approaching.*

*1 John 2:1–2 (NKJV)*¹ *My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. ² And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world.*

*Luke 19:45–46 (NKJV)*⁴⁵ *Then He went into the temple and began to drive out those who bought and sold in it, ⁴⁶ saying to them, "It is written, 'My house is a house of prayer,' but you have made it a 'den of thieves.'"*

Oh the vitalness of what we do here, at the church of the living God, which is the pillar and ground of truth.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

*Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV)*¹² *For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do His mighty work in you, and through you.

*Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV)*¹⁶ *Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

Passage: 1 Timothy 4:6-16
Title: God's Walls of Protection

Last Study: Some Will Depart from the Faith (4:1-5)

1 Timothy 4:1-5 (NKJV) ¹ Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons, ² speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron, ³ forbidding to marry, *and commanding* to abstain from foods which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and know the truth. ⁴ For every creature of God *is* good, and nothing is to be refused if it is received with thanksgiving; ⁵ for it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.

This Study: God's Walls of Protection (4:6-16)

1 Timothy 4:6-16 (NKJV) ⁶ If you instruct the brethren in these things, you will be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished in the words of faith and of the good doctrine which you have carefully followed. ⁷ But reject profane and old wives' fables, and exercise yourself toward godliness. ⁸ For bodily exercise profits a little, but godliness is profitable for all things, having promise of the life that now is and of that which is to come. ⁹ This *is* a faithful saying and worthy of all acceptance. ¹⁰ For to this *end* we both labor and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is *the* Savior of all men, especially of those who believe. ¹¹ These things command and teach. ¹² Let no one despise your youth, but be an example to the believers in word, in conduct, in love, in spirit, in faith, in purity. ¹³ Till I come, give attention to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine. ¹⁴ Do not neglect the gift that is in you, which was given to you by prophecy with the laying on of the hands of the eldership. ¹⁵ Meditate on these things; give yourself entirely to them, that your progress may be evident to all. ¹⁶ Take heed to yourself and to the doctrine. Continue in them, for in doing this you will save both yourself and those who hear you.

The Book of Timothy, written around 64-67AD. Paul the aged and experienced apostle writes to the young Pastor Timothy. Timothy traveled with Paul on his second missionary journey, and they had a special bond. Paul as we read in chapter one calls Timothy a true son in the faith.

Their bond was so close that Paul said no one else thinks so much like me than Timothy.

Philippians 2:19-20 (NKJV) ¹⁹ But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy to you shortly, that I also may be encouraged when I know your state. ²⁰ For I have no one like-minded, who will sincerely care for your state.

Paul and Timothy's story begins back in Acts 16 when Paul take him with him on his second missionary journey, and there this special father son relationship begins, and will last until Paul dies.

Acts 16:1-5 (NKJV) ¹ Then he came to Derbe and Lystra. And behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain Jewish woman who believed, but his father was Greek. ² He was well spoken of by the brethren who were at Lystra and Iconium. ³ Paul wanted to have him go on with him. And he took him and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in that region, for they all knew that his father was Greek. ⁴ And as they went through the cities, they delivered to them the decrees to keep, which were determined by the apostles and elders at Jerusalem. ⁵ So the churches were strengthened in the faith, and increased in number daily.

As Paul would establish churches and move on, we read that he would often leave Timothy behind to help those churches in their growth. As we will read this letter, we will see that although Timothy is in leadership, he still struggles with how to handle certain situations, he is still growing in his own maturity, and in leadership. I believe this book is applicable to all of us in some way or another because we are in the ministry in some form or fashion. Some teach bible Studies to adults, others are raising kids, some.....

Paul writes to Timothy so that he may know how the church is to function.

The Theme of this letter:

1 Timothy 3:14-16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

The Outline:

- The Church and its Message – Chapter 1
- The Church and its Members – Chapter 2 & 3
- The Church and its Minister – Chapter 4
- The Church and its Ministry to Itself – Chapter 5

- The Church and its Motives – Chapter 6

Paul will instruct Timothy how the church is function, but understand this, the church is both corporately, and individually. The things taught in this book are for us as a group, the church and its four walls, and for us individually, for we are the temple of God, we are the body of Christ, the sum of individuals make up the whole Church Body.

1 Corinthians 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?

These books (1&2 Timothy and Titus) have been called the Pastoral Epistles. For they help instruct ministers on how to serve in the ministry.

The second theme of this book, is chapter 1, verse 12:

(1 Timothy 1:12 NKJV) And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord who has enabled me, because He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry,

Being in the ministry is a gift from God, not a burden, be thankful to be called. Glean from this book so that you may be a faithful minister.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

So, First Timothy, chapter 4: The Church and It's Minister.

Last Study: Some Will Depart from the Faith (4:1-5)

1 Timothy 4:1-5 (NKJV) ¹ Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons, ² speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron, ³ forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from foods which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and know the truth. ⁴ For every creature of God is good, and nothing is to be refused if it is received with thanksgiving; ⁵ for it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.

This Study: God's Walls of Protection (4:6-16)

1 Timothy 4:6-16 (NKJV) ⁶ If you instruct the brethren in these things, you will be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished in the words of faith and of the good doctrine which you have carefully followed. ⁷ But reject profane and old wives' fables, and exercise yourself toward godliness. ⁸ For bodily exercise profits a little, but godliness is profitable for all things, having promise of the life that now is and of that which is to come. ⁹ This is a faithful saying and worthy of all acceptance. ¹⁰ For to this end we both labor and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Savior of all men, especially of those who believe. ¹¹ These things command and teach. ¹² Let no one despise your youth, but be an example to the believers in word, in conduct, in love, in spirit, in faith, in purity. ¹³ Till I come, give attention to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine. ¹⁴ Do not neglect the gift that is in you, which was given to you by prophecy with the laying on of the hands of the eldership. ¹⁵ Meditate on these things; give yourself entirely to them, that your progress may be evident to all. ¹⁶ Take heed to yourself and to the doctrine. Continue in them, for in doing this you will save both yourself and those who hear you.

In the first three chapters of his letter, Paul tells Timothy to use the Bible biblically - stand up for sound doctrine - fight the fight of faith. He says elders should be "apt to teach" - and He calls the church "the pillar and ground of the truth." Why all this emphasis on right doctrine? Because the

closer we get to the last days, false teaching will abound. It's a shock to a new Christian to realize not every so-called "Bible teacher" really teaches the Bible. Some speak "lies in hypocrisy."

Realize not everything labeled "spiritual" is godly or biblical. Walk into the "Religion and Spirituality" section at a Barnes and Noble Bookstore, and you'll find books by Max Lucado and the Dalai Lama on the same shelf! Today's world is fascinated with all things "spiritual." Paul tells Timothy there are "deceiving spirits" in the world, and demons spewing doctrine. When Satan fell, a third of the angels joined his revolt. These angels are spiritual, but they're "deceiving spirits" who inspire false doctrine. Their goal is for us to "depart from the faith."

We will read in this chapter, that God will give the church 2 things to guard themselves from these deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons.....the Word of God, and strong Godly leadership.

the Word of God – Wall #1 between the enemy and God's children's

- *(1 Timothy 4:6 NKJV) If you instruct the brethren in these things, you will be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished in the words of faith and of the good doctrine which you have carefully followed.*
- *(1 Timothy 4:11 NKJV) These things command and teach.*
- *(1 Timothy 4:13 NKJV) Till I come, give attention to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.*
- *(1 Timothy 4:16 NKJV) Take heed to yourself and to the doctrine. Continue in them, for in doing this you will save both yourself and those who hear you.*

Strong Godly Leadership – Wall #2 between the enemy and God's children's

- *(1 Timothy 4:6 NKJV) If you instruct the brethren in these things, you will be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished in the words of faith and of the good doctrine which you have carefully followed.*
- *(1 Timothy 4:12 NKJV) Let no one despise your youth, but be an example to the believers in word, in conduct, in love, in spirit, in faith, in purity.*
- *(1 Timothy 4:15 NKJV) Meditate on these things; give yourself entirely to them, that your progress may be evident to all.*
- *(1 Timothy 4:16 NKJV) Take heed to yourself and to the doctrine. Continue in them, for in doing this you will save both yourself and those who hear you.*

(1 Timothy 4:4 NKJV) For every creature of God is good, and nothing is to be refused if it is received with thanksgiving;

(1 Timothy 4:5 NKJV) for it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.

Thanksgiving - what an unlocking of criticality and thanklessness - give thanks leads to sanctified (set apart) prayer, as I have moved beyond my focus on negative thoughts and conversations with myself to attitude of gratitude, and then apply power to it by the word - when I/we pray according to word of God I know I am praying in accordance to His will and power, and I say power because living and moving in accordance to His will is pure power.

- I give thanks in a bad work situation, Lord this treatment of me is not good, but I thank you for provision, not unemployed, and am making my house payment and have food on the table.
- Lord, this ministry situation isn't what I had expected, but I give thanks that I am in the ministry and having the opportunity to minister, and simply pray you will sanctify this, and set it apart for Your glory.
- Lord this relationship situation is not good, but I give thanks there is still a realm of possibility because You are the God who does the impossible, not I sanctify and set this relationship apart for You, and ask You to be glorified in it, so all may see God.... God sees and cares about every relationship.

1 Thessalonians 5:16-18 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Rejoice always, ¹⁷ pray without ceasing, ¹⁸ in everything give thanks; for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus for you.

(1 Timothy 4:6 NKJV) If you instruct the brethren in these things, you will be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished in the words of faith and of the good doctrine which you have carefully followed.

(1 Timothy 4:7 NKJV) But reject profane and old wives' fables, and exercise yourself toward godliness.

People need to be instructed in God's Word. Christianity is a teaching enterprise.

I think of all the things modern man says church should be, and tries to make it out to be, but Jesus made it real clear and simple to Peter of what the calling was to be, feed the flock the God: *John 21:15-17 (NKJV)* ¹⁵ So when they had eaten breakfast, Jesus said to Simon Peter, "Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me more than these?" He said to Him, "Yes, Lord; You know that I love You." He said to him, "Feed My lambs." ¹⁶ He said to him again a second time, "Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me?" He said to Him, "Yes, Lord; You know that I love You." He said to him, "Tend My sheep." ¹⁷ He said to him the third time, "Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me?" Peter was grieved because He said to him the third time, "Do you love Me?" And he said to Him, "Lord, You know all things; You know that I love You." Jesus said to him, "Feed My sheep.

We talked of how everything that tries to make itself spiritual, is not necessarily spiritual; and also unspiritual things, carnal and fleshly things can creep into the church. I am reminded of 2 Kings 4 when poison entered the pot, God direction to the prophet was to pour the meal (flour) into the pot and it would take away the poison. I see an amen illustration there for all of us, when a poison of the world creeps in, make a meal, the bounty of the word of God, and let it purify the pot!

2 Kings 4:38-41 (NKJV) ³⁸ And Elisha returned to Gilgal, and there was a famine in the land. Now the sons of the prophets were sitting before him; and he said to his servant, "Put on the large pot, and boil stew for the sons of the prophets." ³⁹ So one went out into the field to gather herbs, and found a wild vine, and gathered from it a lapful of wild gourds, and came and sliced them into the pot of stew, though they did not know what they were. ⁴⁰ Then they served it to the men to eat. Now it happened, as they were eating the stew, that they cried out and said, "Man of God, there is death in the pot!" And they could not eat it. ⁴¹ So he said, "Then bring some flour." And he put it into the pot, and said, "Serve it to the people, that they may eat." And there was nothing harmful in the pot.

(1 Timothy 4:7 NKJV) But reject profane and old wives' fables, and exercise yourself toward godliness.

Well here we are with all the debates regarding vaccines, masks, lockdown - anything that can kill you should concern you - but avoid the imbalance that I/we can talk more about those things than the things of the Lord.

How do you guard yourself against the doctrine of demons?

1 Timothy 4:1 (NKJV) ¹ Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons,

You train yourself in godliness. Godliness means God likeness. I remember several years ago I was going to go out west to Utah and ski. Now I had never skied hills like that on the East Coast, I had never seen hill that steep and long. So I started to train, I was running, I was hitting the squat rack and Stairmaster, I trained hard. When I got there and look down those hills, I was glad I trained the way I did. Now I could have gone out in the shape I was in and survived, but I didn't go out there to survive, but to take full advantage of what was before.

Christian, what type of training are you doing. As for skiing I could have shown up and seen what happened, but as Christians living in this world today, we can't expect some magical anointing when the need arises, we have to be in a daily regiment of spiritual exercise. Survival isn't what God is looking for in the Christian life or ministry, He is looking for so much more.

(1 Timothy 4:8 NKJV) For bodily exercise profits a little, but godliness is profitable for all things, having promise of the life that now is and of that which is to come.

Man is body, spirit, and soul. We need to be on guard of a worn-down body. I think we equally need to be on guard of overly concerned about our bodies (as my friend Pastor Ted says, when I would tell him my workout routine, “rotten flesh”).

1 Thessalonians 5:23 (NKJV) ²³ Now may the God of peace Himself sanctify you completely; and may your whole spirit, soul, and body be preserved blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Remember, when did Satan attack Jesus when His body worn down – How did Satan attack Paul, with a thorn in the flesh.

Matthew 4:1–2 (NKJV) ¹ Then Jesus was led up by the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by the devil. ² And when He had fasted forty days and forty nights, afterward He was hungry.

2 Corinthians 12:7–10 (NKJV) ⁷ And lest I should be exalted above measure by the abundance of the revelations, a thorn in the flesh was given to me, a messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I be exalted above measure. ⁸ Concerning this thing I pleaded with the Lord three times that it might depart from me. ⁹ And He said to me, “My grace is sufficient for you, for My strength is made perfect in weakness.” Therefore most gladly I will rather boast in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. ¹⁰ Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in needs, in persecutions, in distresses, for Christ’s sake. For when I am weak, then I am strong.

We are not under the law regarding the sabbath rest, but God gave the sabbath for man to rest. Christian slow down, get rest. But balance this, don’t stop serving- or you will find yourself with spiritual hardening of the arteries. Literally, it’s the whole book we are studying the power and joy of serving.

I love Isaiah 40

Isaiah 40:28–31 (NKJV) ²⁸ Have you not known? Have you not heard? The everlasting God, the LORD, The Creator of the ends of the earth, Neither faints nor is weary. His understanding is unsearchable. ²⁹ He gives power to the weak, And to those who have no might He increases strength. ³⁰ Even the youths shall faint and be weary, And the young men shall utterly fall, ³¹ But those who wait on the LORD Shall renew their strength; They shall mount up with wings like eagles, They shall run and not be weary, They shall walk and not faint.

Hey, Even the youths shall faint and be weary, and young men shall feel exhausted” (Isaiah 40:30) but waiting on God renews their strength and displays godly wisdom for there is an empowerment in waiting, resting and relying upon God and not ourselves.

Which by the way, we are told those who serve well, find a boldness and confidence in their witness – so let’s serve well, by resting well, and directing our energies where the greatest profit can be found:

1 Timothy 3:13 (NKJV) ¹³ For those who have served well as deacons obtain for themselves a good standing and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus.

(1 Timothy 4:9 NKJV) This is a faithful saying and worthy of all acceptance.

The sentence structure is somewhat difficult in determining if this statement (faithful saying worthy of all acceptance) is referring back to verse 8 (exercising godliness), or pointing forward to verse 10 (we labor and suffer reproach because we trust in the living God). In my research, I did not find any writings that used either of these phrases, howbeit my research is somewhat limited.

But here is what I can declare that is faithful, and that is both statements because....

These words are faithful, if we apply these words, then God will be faithful to them.

Hear this Christian, God never gives His word independent of Himself. The Spirit always testifies of His Word.

Matthew 22:29 (NKJV) ²⁹ Jesus answered and said to them, “You are mistaken, not knowing the Scriptures nor the power of God.

There is nothing that you or I can proclaim with greater confidence than the Word of God. Not one single verse will fall to the ground because the Spirit of God will take it to peoples heart.

(1 Timothy 4:10 NKJV) For to this end we both labor and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Savior of all men, especially of those who believe.

Here Paul is saying it will get harder and harder not only to minister for God, but to live for God as people will come against you for your belief. But don't give up, remember the confident heart, and the hopeful heart, live life backwards, heaven is so near, don't quit now or slow down.

We labor because we trust Him. We trust our labors are changing lives, transforming lives, rescuing marriages, raising godly children who will become adults themselves, we labor because we trust He holds the keys to life, eternity, rescue and saving people from the grip of sin and sentence of hell. That's why we do what we do, at the extent and price it costs us.

We suffer reproach because we trust in him

I pray you are suffering reproach.... As a Pastor I pray, you are suffering reproach because of your trust in Hm.

I am a Christian.”

The young man said nothing else as he stood before the Roman governor, his life hanging in the balance. His accusers pressed him again, hoping to trip him up or force him to recant. But once more he answered with the same short phrase. “I am a Christian.”

It was the middle of the second century, during the reign of emperor Marcus Aurelius. Christianity was illegal, and believers throughout the Roman Empire faced the threat of imprisonment, torture, or death. Persecution was especially intense in southern Europe, where Sanctus, a deacon from Vienna, had been arrested and brought to trial. The young man was repeatedly told to renounce the faith he professed. But his resolve was undeterred. “I am a Christian.”

No matter what question he was asked, he always gave the same unchanging answer. According to the ancient church historian Eusebius, Sanctus “girded himself against [his accusers] with such firmness that he would not even tell his name, or the nation or city to which he belonged, or whether he was bond or free, but answered in the Roman tongue to all their questions, ‘I am a Christian.’” When at last it became obvious that he would say nothing else, he was condemned to severe torture and a public death in the amphitheater. On the day of his execution, he was forced to run the gauntlet, subjected to wild beasts, and fastened to a chair of burning iron. Throughout all of it, his accusers kept trying to break him, convinced that his resistance would crack under the pain of torment. But as Eusebius recounted, “Even thus they did not hear a word from Sanctus except the confession which he had uttered from the beginning.” His dying words told of an undying commitment. His rallying cry remained constant throughout his entire trial. “I am a Christian.”

For Sanctus, his whole identity—including his name, citizenship, and social status—was found in Jesus Christ. Hence, no better answer could have been given to the questions he was asked. He was a Christian, and that designation defined everything about him.

This same perspective was shared by countless others in the early church. It fueled their witness, strengthened their resolve, and confounded their opponents. When arrested, these courageous believers would confidently respond as Sanctus had, with a succinct assertion of their loyalty to Christ. As one historian explained about the early martyrs,

They [would reply] to all questionings about them [with] the short but comprehensive answer, “I

am a Christian.” Again and again they caused no little perplexity to their judges by the pertinacity with which they adhered to this brief profession of faith. The question was repeated, “Who are you?” and they replied, “I have already said that I am a Christian; and he who says that has thereby named his country, his family, his profession, and all things else besides.”

Following Jesus Christ was the sum of their entire existence. At the moment when life itself was on the line, nothing else mattered besides identifying themselves with Him. For these faithful believers, the name “Christian” was much more than just a general religious designation. It defined everything about them, including how they viewed both themselves and the world around them. The label underscored their love for a crucified Messiah along with their willingness to follow Him no matter the cost. It told of the wholesale transformation God had produced in their hearts, and witnessed to the fact that they had been made completely new in Him. They had died to their old way of life, having been born again into the family of God. Christian was not simply a title, but an entirely new way of thinking—one that had serious implications for how they lived—and ultimately how they died.

**MacArthur, J. F., Jr. (2012). Slave: the hidden truth about your identity in Christ. Nashville: Thomas Nelson.*

May our lives, our very being, bring Him glory. This whole epistle is a call to GLORY

1 Corinthians 10:31 (NKJV) ³¹ Therefore, whether you eat or drink, or whatever you do, do all to the glory of God.

1 Corinthians 6:20 (NKJV) ²⁰ For you were bought at a price; therefore glorify God in your body and in your spirit, which are God's.

We trust in the living God: This is to be the great motto of the Christian life. Even as David challenged Goliath in the name of the living God (1 Samuel 17:26 and 36), so our trust in the living God empowers us to accomplish great things for His glory.

The Savior of all men: This emphasizes the idea that the priority must be kept on the message of Jesus Christ. It isn't that all men are saved in an universalist sense; but that there is only one Savior for all men. It isn't as if Christians have one Savior and others might have another savior.

But notice Paul's point: especially of those who believe. Jesus' work is adequate to save all, but only effective in saving those who come to Him by faith

Strong Godly Leadership:

(1 Timothy 4:11 NKJV) These things command and teach.

Pastor/Teachers are for the equipping of the saints so that they will not get tossed to and fro. To guard them from the spiritual sharks.

Ephesians 4:11–14 (NKJV) ¹¹ And He Himself gave some to be apostles, some prophets, some evangelists, and some pastors and teachers, ¹² for the equipping of the saints for the work of ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ, ¹³ till we all come to the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God, to a perfect man, to the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ; ¹⁴ that we should no longer be children, tossed to and fro and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the trickery of men, in the cunning craftiness of deceitful plotting,

Do you remember JAWS? Do you remember the opening scene, that girl taking that first hit. That was a very impacting scene, to be honest, I really can't remember me in the ocean much anymore where my feet don't touch the bottom. But do you remember the town council people telling the sheriff, you need to be quiet about this, this is a rare circumstance, don't go get everybody all scared. This is our money season, we live or die off these three months, we need these people coming to the beach to spend their money, don't scare them off. Then, remember the little boy on the raft, remember that scene, JAWS was truly the beginning of Hollywood's special effect coming of age. But what calls out to my mind, remember the mother looking for her boy in the midst of all that chaos, the fear on her face when she couldn't find him. And then her slapping the sheriff in the face, saying you knew all the time and you never told us. If you would have told us, then my son wouldn't be dead right now.

There are times when people will say keep quiet about this knowledge, it will ruin your career, your business, our comfort zone, our fun, etc.

We have to tell the people, we have to warn them of the dangers. Let no one slap our face for not telling them what we knew. All we do is declare it, what they do with it after is none of our business.

This word command used here is a military term. In battle the command is yelled out, it can't be explained in battle, it must be acted upon immediately. Bible studies (personal and public) are the training grounds, so when the battle comes you act upon it, don't question it, you act and get out of the situation according to what God commands, and then when you are safe analyze what has just happened.

Acts 20:26–29 (NKJV) ²⁶ Therefore I testify to you this day that I am innocent of the blood of all men. ²⁷ For I have not shunned to declare to you the whole counsel of God. ²⁸ Therefore take heed to yourselves and to all the flock, among which the Holy Spirit has made you overseers, to shepherd the church of God which He purchased with His own blood. ²⁹ For I know this, that after my departure savage wolves will come in among you, not sparing the flock.

The whole counsel of God, that is why we do verse-by-verse.

In verse 6 it says to instruct, bring to remembrance, point out, depending on your translation. It is the same Greek word, and it means to lay before, gently, humbly. Here in this verse it says command. So sometimes we command, sometimes we instruct.

(Proverbs 25:15 NIV) Through patience a ruler can be persuaded, and a gentle tongue can break a bone.

(1 Timothy 4:12 NKJV) Let no one despise your youth, but be an example to the believers in word, in conduct, in love, in spirit, in faith, in purity.

Youth in that day meant anyone of age to serve in the military. That would mean anyone under the age of 40. It is estimated that Timothy was 30-31 years old, but we really don't know for sure. What we do know is that he was ministering to people older than himself. Despise means to look down upon, and some were looking down upon him because he was so much younger than the average minister. It was a cultural thing. Today we live in the youthful culture. For Timothy he lived in an "Old Culture", they didn't want to hear from a kid.

You youth don't let people say you are too young. The truth is the truth no matter what age it comes from. If the Lord has come upon you and placed a calling upon you, then step out and go. One of Satan's great lies is for you new believers, he tells you that you've only been saved a short, you are so young in the Lord, you need to wait before you start doing things for the Lord. The problem is you cool, and since you never served, some turn lukewarm, and never do get into serving. Don't wait, minister at your, and watch what the Lord does in your walk. It will be awesome.

Modern methodology wants leadership to have experience, and I agree and do not discount that, but I would say the greatest experience is the personal experience, encounter, with God the Holy Spirit. Get filled with the Holy Spirit and you will turn your world upside down

Acts 17:6 (NKJV) ⁶ But when they did not find them, they dragged Jason and some brethren to the rulers of the city, crying out, "These who have turned the world upside down have come here too."

Jesus & His Disciples – I think of the disciples, most historians and scholars agree upon they were all younger men, probably as young as Jesus and even young.

- The Bible does not specifically give the ages of any of the original twelve disciples. However, a few observations can be made regarding their ages.
- First, Scripture teaches Jesus was about 30 years old when He began His public ministry (Luke 3:23). In Jewish culture, disciples (or students) were generally younger than their teacher. Therefore, it is likely the disciples were under 30 years of age. Jesus also referred to them as "little children," possibly indicating they were several years younger

than He.

- Second, many of the disciples worked as fishermen. James and John specifically left their father in the boat to follow Jesus (Matthew 4:21–22). This means they were old enough to work full-time. They were likely at least teenagers by this time, since they could leave home to follow a rabbi.
- Third, Peter is noted as already married when he began following Jesus. His sick mother-in-law is mentioned in Matthew 8:14. This means Peter was at least old enough to be married; at the very least, Peter was in his mid-teens.
- Fourth, the later lives of many of the disciples help to reveal their possible ages. John lived the longest, passing away in the last decade of the first century, according to church history. This was 60 years after walking with Jesus. Even if John were in his 90s when he died, he would have been no more than 30 years old at the time he was with Jesus. Since John was old enough to care for the mother of Jesus (John 19:26–27), he was probably at least 20 at the time of the crucifixion.
- Peter referred to himself as an old man when he was in his 60s, about 30 years after walking with Jesus. This may mean Peter was in his 20s or 30s at the time he was with Jesus. The Gospel of Matthew was written 30–40 years after Jesus' resurrection, indicating that Matthew was perhaps in his 20s when following Jesus on earth.
- Jewish culture made it customary for a child to begin his religious training at the age of 5 and to continue to age 12 or 13. If a boy was intelligent and interested in continuing his religious studies, he would then seek a rabbi to disciple him and would follow and pattern his life after the rabbi until age 30. At that time he could take on disciples of his own. A young man's discipleship training under a rabbi would usually begin between the ages of 13 and 15. If this pattern was consistent with the followers of Jesus, some of them may have joined Jesus as early as age 13 and would have still been teenagers at the time of His death, resurrection, and ascension.
- Though the Bible does not give the exact ages of the disciples of Jesus, it is likely they were all between the ages of 13 and 30 at the time they followed Jesus. This view allows for some variety in their ages, with John likely the youngest and Peter perhaps one of the oldest since he was already married.

Jeremiah – Of course how can we not think of the words of Jeremiah,

Jeremiah 1:4–9 (NKJV) ⁴ Then the word of the LORD came to me, saying: ⁵ "Before I formed you in the womb I knew you; Before you were born I sanctified you; I ordained you a prophet to the nations." ⁶ Then said I: "Ah, Lord GOD! Behold, I cannot speak, for I am a youth." ⁷ But the LORD said to me: "Do not say, 'I am a youth,' For you shall go to all to whom I send you, And whatever I command you, you shall speak. ⁸ Do not be afraid of their faces, For I am with you to deliver you," says the LORD. ⁹ Then the LORD put forth His hand and touched my mouth, and the LORD said to me: "Behold, I have put My words in your mouth.

Greg Laurie was pastoring a church at 19 of 30, and Spurgeon at 19 was pastoring 300.

Yes study to show yourself approved, but you could easily burn through, and catch on fire, in our school of discipleship in one year, two at the most if you so desire.

2 Timothy 2:15–16 (NKJV) ¹⁵ Be diligent to present yourself approved to God, a worker who does not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. ¹⁶ But shun profane and idle babblings, for they will increase to more ungodliness.

And I make a call to you older men, invest in young men, take and interest in them, make yourself available to them, invite them out to lunch or coffee, get them on your speed-dial so you can stay connected with them, help guard them from the pressures and temptation of youth in our culture, store your treasure yep in heaven by investing in them:

2 Timothy 2:2 (NKJV) ² And the things that you have heard from me among many witnesses, commit these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also.

Matthew 6:19–21 (NKJV) ¹⁹ "Do not lay up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy and where thieves break in and steal; ²⁰ but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust destroys and where thieves do not break in and steal. ²¹ For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.

In reference to your youth, Silence your critics by your conduct. You youth, maturity is the best way to bridge the generation gap, not your clothes or cigarettes.

Verse 12.....but be an example to the believers

Chapter 1 we were called to be a pattern:

1 Timothy 1:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ However, for this reason I obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might show all longsuffering, as a pattern to those who are going to believe on Him for everlasting life.

Son," said the concerned father, "you're not studying the way you could. When Abraham Lincoln was your age, he didn't have computers or electric lights. He walked fifteen miles through the snow to check out books at the library—and then walked fifteen miles home so that he could read them by the light of the fireplace. When he was your age, that's what he did."

"Well," replied the son, "when Abraham Lincoln was your age, he was President of the United States!"

But here we are called to be an example, different Greek word from pattern. The word means: tupos, too'-pos; a die (as struck), i.e. (by impl.) a stamp or scar; by anal. a shape, i.e. a statue, (fig.) style or resemblance; spec. a sampler ("type"), i.e. a model (for imitation) or instance (for warning):--en- (ex-) ample, fashion, figure, form, manner, pattern, print.

It was the word they used to stamp a coin. They would take metal and imprint the coin with the image they desired it to look like. The meaning is the same today in any sense, when people leave a person living for Jesus Christ, they leave with a lasting impression, there was no doubt you are who you say you are.

Verse 12....In what manner, in these six listed in this verse

1. In your speech – know, speak, being led by the Word of God
2. In your conduct (lifestyle) – Let your conduct be one that studies the word of God and believes its blessed promises. A life that says my whole life shall be one service for the living God. Conduct that walks uprightly and doesn't regard iniquity in your heart and with the simplicity of a child confides in God.
3. In your love – an unconditional love
4. In your spirit – the attitude you do it in
5. In your faith – trusting that God is on the throne.
6. In your purity – very important here, especially because I believe based on Timothy's age, he is single and has to struggle through all the culture around him.

Christian men/woman, don't compromise. If there were two polar opposites kings in Israel it would be King Jehoshaphat and King Ahab. One loved the Lord and His ways (Jehoshaphat) and one despised the ways of the Lord, and his wife along with him, Ahab and Jezebel. The son of Jehoshaphat was Jehoram, and even the amazement that he grew up in one of the greatest kings of Israel as a king and a father, we read that he married the daughter of Ahab and Jezebel, and his life as great as it could have been, was known for evil and failure. Oh please young men and woman, don't compromise, wait for a godly man/woman who the two of you together can scale great heights and accomplish great feats together, and know love and romance, as God

intends it to be. You won't regret it, trust me from someone who waited 38 years, but knew God's ways are perfect, and I He delivered on His promise.

2 Kings 8:16–19 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Now in the fifth year of Joram the son of Ahab, king of Israel, Jehoshaphat having been king of Judah, Jehoram the son of Jehoshaphat began to reign as king of Judah. ¹⁷ He was thirty-two years old when he became king, and he reigned eight years in Jerusalem. ¹⁸ And he walked in the way of the kings of Israel, just as the house of Ahab had done, for the daughter of Ahab was his wife; and he did evil in the sight of the LORD. ¹⁹ Yet the LORD would not destroy Judah, for the sake of his servant David, as He promised him to give a lamp to him and his sons forever.

(1 Timothy 4:13 NKJV) Till I come, give attention to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.

Exhortation - paraklesis, par-ak'-lay-sis; imploration, hortation, solace:--comfort, consolation, exhortation, intreaty. – all of which mean to draw near.

The Word will draw you near to God, it will come alongside of you to tell you what to do with the what you just read.

Let me give you a mini-course in how to study your Bible. 3 points everytime you study, Observation/Interpretation/Application. Observation is what the Word says, Application is what the Word means, and then Application (Exhortation) is so what does this mean to you, how do I apply this my life.

Phillip Brooks would write his studies, then go for a walk in the streets of Philadelphia and then ask the Lord what does this have to do with their life. How does this apply to them. EM Bounds said we are not sermon makers, but men makers.

(1 Timothy 4:14 NKJV) Do not neglect the gift that is in you, which was given to you by prophecy with the laying on of the hands of the eldership.

(1 Timothy 4:15 NKJV) Meditate on these things; give yourself entirely to them, that your progress may be evident to all.

Meditate - meletao, mel-et-ah'-o; to take care of, i.e. (by impl.) revolve in the mind:--imagine, (pre-) meditate. To revolve in the mind, to think it over and over. Chew on it

(1 Timothy 4:16 NKJV) Take heed to yourself and to the doctrine. Continue in them, for in doing this you will save both yourself and those who hear you.

The Word of God, and Godly Leaders, the two barriers God puts up against deceiving spirits and doctrine of demons.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Chapter 5

Passage: 1 Timothy 5:1-16

Title: Family First

1 Timothy 5:1–16 (NKJV) ¹ Do not rebuke an older man, but exhort him as a father, younger men as brothers, ² older women as mothers, younger women as sisters, with all purity. ³ Honor widows who are really widows. ⁴ But if any widow has children or grandchildren, let them first learn to show piety at home and to repay their parents; for this is good and acceptable before God. ⁵ Now she who is really a widow, and left alone, trusts in God and continues in supplications and prayers night and day. ⁶ But she who lives in pleasure is dead while she lives. ⁷ And these things command, that they may be blameless. ⁸ But if anyone does not provide for his own, and especially for those of his household, he has denied the faith and is worse than an unbeliever. ⁹ Do not let a widow under sixty years old be taken into the number, and not unless she has been the wife of one man, ¹⁰ well reported for good works: if she has brought up children, if she has lodged strangers, if she has washed the saints' feet, if she has relieved the afflicted, if she has diligently followed every good work. ¹¹ But refuse the younger widows; for when they have begun to grow wanton against Christ, they desire to marry, ¹² having condemnation because they have cast off their first faith. ¹³ And besides they learn to be idle, wandering about from house to house, and not only idle but also gossips and busybodies, saying things which they ought not. ¹⁴ Therefore I desire that the younger widows marry, bear children, manage the house, give no opportunity to the adversary to speak reproachfully. ¹⁵ For some have already turned aside after Satan. ¹⁶ If any believing man or woman has widows, let them relieve them, and do not let the church be burdened, that it may relieve those who are really widows.

The Book of Timothy, written around 64-67AD. Paul the aged and experienced apostle writes to the young Pastor Timothy. Timothy traveled with Paul on his second missionary journey, and they had a special bond. Paul as we read in chapter one calls Timothy a true son in the faith.

Their bond was so close that Paul said no one else thinks so much like me than Timothy.

Philippians 2:19–20 (NKJV) ¹⁹ But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy to you shortly, that I also may be encouraged when I know your state. ²⁰ For I have no one like-minded, who will sincerely care for your state.

Paul and Timothy's story begins back in Acts 16 when Paul take him with him on his second missionary journey, and there this special father son relationship begins, and will last until Paul dies.

Acts 16:1–5 (NKJV) ¹ Then he came to Derbe and Lystra. And behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain Jewish woman who believed, but his father was Greek. ² He was well spoken of by the brethren who were at Lystra and Iconium. ³ Paul wanted to have him go on with him. And he took him and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in that region, for they all knew that his father was Greek. ⁴ And as they went through the cities, they delivered to them the decrees to keep, which were determined by the apostles and elders at Jerusalem. ⁵ So the churches were strengthened in the faith, and increased in number daily.

As Paul would establish churches and move on, we read that he would often leave Timothy behind to help those churches in their growth. As we will read this letter, we will see that although Timothy is in leadership, he still struggles with how to handle certain situations, he is still growing in his own maturity, and in leadership. I believe this book is applicable to all of us in some way or another because we are in the ministry in some form or fashion. Some teach bible Studies to adults, others are raising kids, some.....

Paul writes to Timothy so that he may know how the church is to function.

The Theme of this letter:

1 Timothy 3:14–16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

The Outline:

- The Church and its Message – Chapter 1
- The Church and its Members – Chapter 2 & 3
- The Church and its Minister – Chapter 4
- The Church and its Ministry to Itself – Chapter 5
- The Church and its Motives – Chapter 6

Paul will instruct Timothy how the church is function, but understand this, the church is both corporately, and individually. The things taught in this book are for us as a group, the church and its four walls, and for us individually, for we are the temple of God, we are the body of Christ, the sum of individuals make up the whole Church Body.

1 Corinthians 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?

These books (1&2 Timothy and Titus) have been called the Pastoral Epistles. For they help instruct ministers on how to serve in the ministry.

The second theme of this book, is chapter 1, verse 12:

(1 Timothy 1:12 NKJV) And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord who has enabled me, because He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry,

Being in the ministry is a gift from God, not a burden, be thankful to be called. Glean from this book so that you may be a faithful minister.

Today's Passage

In chapter 3 we are told that the church of God is the pillar and ground of truth for the whole community (world too); in our passage here in chapter 5 we see that the Lord is giving a clear calling, that for the world to see the pillar and ground of truth, it has to first be applied within the church and family household first. Come and let the Word stir us to the great calling of "Family First".

Let me start with this before we go anywhere else in our study.... If you are a widow, God sees you.

Can I say that again before we start anything else in our Bible study today? If you were a widow here today, male or female, God sees you. God sees the hurting of your heart. God knows a piece of you is missing. I won't say in our passage today, what a heart God has for widows, and therefore He's the same yesterday, today and forever. And His heart is for you who are widowed.

But let me also say this, your spouse may still be alive, but you feel widowed. You feel all alone, you feel everything is you and you alone in isolation maybe even now in desperation. Your marriage is alive and living but you feel widowed relationally. Abandoned maybe, forgotten, taken for granted. God wants you to know His heart for you today. I see you. I'm coming. I'm here for you. Not one hair has dropped from your stress. Not one tear has dropped from your depress. I've captured them all. I store them in a bottle and my heart breaks for every one of them that falls. And God would speak to you today. I see you.

Psalms 56:8 (NKJV) ⁸ You number my wanderings; Put my tears into Your bottle; Are they not in Your book?

God loves the widows. God cares for the orphans. Not one of them is out of His sight, not upon His heart, nor His mind. The deep, deep love that He has for the widowed, the orphaned, the disabled, the forgotten, the lonely, the abandoned, the unloved. And again, as we say in the beginning, He says to you today, I see you and I'm going to do something about this. I am reminded of Hagar at the well, abandoned, rejected, widowed if you will even though still alive, Ishmael orphaned, put-out, yet God sees.

Genesis 21:14-21 (NKJV) ¹⁴ So Abraham rose early in the morning, and took bread and a skin of water; and putting it on her shoulder, he gave it and the boy to Hagar, and sent her away. Then she departed and wandered in the Wilderness of Beersheba. ¹⁵ And the water in the skin was used up, and she placed the boy under one of the shrubs. ¹⁶ Then she went and sat down across from him at a distance of about a bowshot; for she said to herself, "Let me not see the death of the boy." So she sat opposite him, and lifted her voice and wept. ¹⁷ And God heard the voice of the lad. Then the angel of God called to Hagar out of heaven, and said to her, "What ails you, Hagar? Fear not, for God has heard the voice of the lad where he is. ¹⁸ Arise, lift up the lad and hold him with your hand, for I will make him a great nation." ¹⁹ Then God opened her eyes, and she saw a well of water. And she went and filled the skin with water, and gave the lad a drink. ²⁰ So God was with the lad; and he grew and dwelt in the wilderness, and became an archer. ²¹ He dwelt in the Wilderness of Paran; and his mother took a wife for him from the land of Egypt.

God fulfills His nature that He had reveals to her years early, who obviously she had forgotten, (v.13 – Jehovah El Roi, The God who sees). God sees you widows, orphans, abandoned, cast out, and forgotten. God sees you!

Genesis 16:6–16 (NKJV) ⁶ So Abram said to Sarai, "Indeed your maid is in your hand; do to her as you please." And when Sarai dealt harshly with her, she fled from her presence. ⁷ Now the Angel of the LORD found her by a spring of water in the wilderness, by the spring on the way to Shur. ⁸ And He said, "Hagar, Sarai's maid, where have you come from, and where are you going?" She said, "I am fleeing from the presence of my mistress Sarai." ⁹ The Angel of the LORD said to her, "Return to your mistress, and submit yourself under her hand." ¹⁰ Then the Angel of the LORD said to her, "I will multiply your descendants exceedingly, so that they shall not be counted for multitude." ¹¹ And the Angel of the LORD said to her: "Behold, you are with child, And you shall bear a son. You shall call his name Ishmael, Because the LORD has heard your affliction. ¹² He shall be a wild man; His hand shall be against every man, And every man's hand against him. And he shall dwell in the presence of all his brethren." ¹³ Then she called the name of the LORD who spoke to her, You-Are-the-God-Who-Sees; for she said, "Have I also here seen Him who sees me?" ¹⁴ Therefore the well was called Beer Lahai Roi; observe, it is between Kadesh and Bered. ¹⁵ So Hagar bore Abram a son; and Abram named his son, whom Hagar bore, Ishmael. ¹⁶ Abram was eighty-six years old when Hagar bore Ishmael to Abram.

And you know, church, here's the most amazing thing for you, a reminder we all need to be brought back to, sometime the answer to a widow, orphan, forgotten, lonely, abandoned person's prayer is you.

And now what's left is for you to decide if you're going to do something about it. If you're going to be the answer to the prayer, you're going to be the heart of God to that person. You're going to be the hands and feet of Jesus. You're going to minister to the lonely, the imprisoned, whether iron bars or just the cells of life of loneliness. If you're going to clothe them, whether they be literally naked or just feel cold and lonely out there instead of in here, will you be the answer to that prayer? It's family first, when God says, I see, then He gives those who have eyes to see His eyes to see the need and the calling to move into minister.

Matthew 25:31–40 (NKJV) ³¹ "When the Son of Man comes in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then He will sit on the throne of His glory. ³² All the nations will be gathered before Him, and He will separate them one from another, as a shepherd divides his sheep from the goats. ³³ And He will set the sheep on His right hand, but the goats on the left. ³⁴ Then the King will say to those on His right hand, 'Come, you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world. ³⁵ for I was hungry and you gave Me food; I was thirsty and you gave Me drink; I was a stranger and you took Me in; ³⁶ I was naked and you clothed Me; I was sick and you visited Me; I was in prison and you came to Me.' ³⁷ "Then the righteous will answer Him, saying, 'Lord, when did we see You hungry and feed You, or thirsty and give You drink? ³⁸ When did we see You a stranger and take You in, or naked and clothe You? ³⁹ Or when did we see You sick, or in prison, and come to You?' ⁴⁰ And the King will answer and say to them, 'Assuredly, I say to you, inasmuch as you did it to one of the least of these My brethren, you did it to Me.'

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

So, First Timothy, chapter 5: The Church and It's Ministry to Itself

One of the greatest dangers the people in the church will face will be from the outside teaching of false doctrine. But equally as dangerous will be from within, the insensitive people dealing with them. Today thousands of people will walk into churches to never return, because they felt that

no one cared. How many people will be driven from churches this year because of the way people treated them, or because of their uniqueness of whom they are.

Teachers and Scripture quoters area dime a dozen, but a servant, now that's a different subject.

(Matthew 9:35 NKJV) Then Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness and every disease among the people.

(Matthew 9:36 NKJV) But when He saw the multitudes, He was moved with compassion for them, because they were weary and scattered, like sheep having no shepherd.

Jesus was moved with compassion. Yes there were a lot of religious activities going on, but no one was caring for the people. People in the churches have a wide variety of ages, gender, circumstances, and to each need, they need to be ministered to as unique as they are.

The Church and it's Ministry to Itself, we will see 3 areas in this chapter that God will talk about in reference to the Church and it's Ministry to Itself:

- 1.) The Church and it's Ministry to Itself in treating each other as family (v1-2).
- 2.) The Church and it's Ministry to Itself in the treatment of the Widows (v3-16)
- 3.) The Church and it's Ministry to Itself in the treatment of It's Leaders. (17-25)

1.) The Church and it's Ministry to Itself in treating each other as family (v1-2)

A call to treat and respect the older as parents, and each other as brothers and sisters. We live in a very youthful culture, and the older and elderly can be cast aside, or overlooked because we focus so much on the youth. The Church needs to recognize their needs and uniqueness.

(1 Timothy 5:1 NKJV) Do not rebuke an older man, but exhort him as a father, younger men as brothers,

Verse 1: as we come into older men, we see back in chapter four, it was, "Don't despise the youth." Well, here, well, "Don't despise, ignore or disrespect the older." This word here in verse one, "To rebuke," it means not to chide, to not belittle. It means to respect. It means to honor with words.

The word exhort means to come alongside. This means to call them aside, not publicly (and I don't mean from the pulpit, but anywhere that there is others that can hear), and tell them what they need to know.

The tendency of youth is to be aggressive, Don't despise youth, but don't use it unwisely. It is difficult for the older to receive exhortation from the younger. If it is mishandled, it can cause tremendous damage. I've noticed that I was a whole lot smarter at 22 than I am today. Now that I have lived life a little longer, especially on my own without parental support and covering, now that I've had to take on years of adult responsibility, I've realized how little I knew then, yet thought I was so wise.

Judgmental

Youth are much more energized, and aggressive, but along with that comes some bad things, one, as applied here in this verse is being judgmental. Youth are much more judgmental, because of their lack of living. So quick to cry out for mercy and grace, but just as quick to cast the first rock.

(John 8:4 NKJV) they said to Him, "Teacher, this woman was caught in adultery, in the very act.

(John 8:5 NKJV) "Now Moses, in the law, commanded us that such should be stoned. But what do You say?"

(John 8:6 NKJV) This they said, testing Him, that they might have something of which to accuse Him. But Jesus stooped down and wrote on the ground with His finger, as though He did not hear.

(John 8:7 NKJV) So when they continued asking Him, He raised Himself up and said to them, "He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first."

(John 8:8 NKJV) And again He stooped down and wrote on the ground.

*(John 8:9 NKJV) Then those who heard it, being convicted by their conscience, went out one by one, **beginning with the oldest even to the last.** And Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.*

For you older, respect God's call upon a younger man's life. For you youth, be sensitive to how hard it is for the senior to accept correction from youth, and always remember it is not what you said, but how you said it.

Honor Parents

To not honor thy mother and father was punishable by death, we need to remember this as we deal with our parents, and children as you live with yours.

(1 Timothy 5:2 NKJV) older women as mothers, younger as sisters, with all purity.

Verse 2: "With purity." There's a calling here that's across the board: young men, old men, young women, older women, every between for purity. And let me speak this very clear as I spoke it very clear last week. Impurity, especially in the form of sexual immorality, will be the greatest destruction of God's move in your life and in your ministry and in your church. God is calling for purity, a sexual purity in the midst of a sex saturated cultural world that we live in.

And this loops us back to chapter two, where "The women were to adorn themselves in modest apparel with propriety and moderation." And here is the heart of what's being said there, is the guarding against a person, male or female, of being an object. And that's what makes this impurity, this pornography, this lust continue on and on even in believers as they take that person and they turn them into an object and they, literally, separate the humanity from them, the creation from them, the glory of them made in God's image. And they just turn them into an object and they can use that object however they choose because they've separated them, but that's a human, a person. And, in many cases, inside the church, that's your brother, that's your sister. It's to objectify them, if that word is even a word. It's to dehumanize them. But once you take them and make them God's glory, his crowning jewel, day six, God's creation saved or unsaved, believer or unbeliever, in the church or out of the church and say, "That's someone's daughter. That's someone's wife. That is someone's bride of Christ. That is God's glory that he bought with a price, his very own blood, that will change your whole mindset when it comes to lust and pornography and these type of things.

[1 Timothy 2:9-10 \(NKJV\)](#) ⁹ in like manner also, that the women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with propriety and moderation, not with braided hair or gold or pearls or costly clothing, ¹⁰ but, which is proper for women professing godliness, with good works.

Can I say that to women? Don't allow the world or the culture to turn you into an object. Hear God's word here in chapter two and trust the Lord that you're the gift and the glory, the crowning jewel, day six of his creation. God created the male and female.

[Genesis 1:26-27 \(NKJV\)](#) ²⁶ Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth." ²⁷ So God created man in His *own* image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them.

The Church and its Ministry to Itself in the treatment of the Widows (v3-16)

(1 Timothy 5:3 NKJV) Honor widows who are really widows.

The Heart of God

These are not just facts on how to run to the church, but the very heart of God. God is going to tell us how much these widows mean to Him, therefore how much they should mean to us. I love studying the heart of God, so that my heart may change to be like his.

(1 Timothy 5:4 NKJV) But if any widow has children or grandchildren, let them first learn to show piety at home and to repay their parents; for this is good and acceptable before God.

This isn't that the church is to support every widow, but a clear specific widow with a need. A widow without kids or grandchildren, nor parents for that matter, for if she did have parents still alive she was to go take care of them.

(1 Timothy 5:5 NKJV) Now she who is really a widow, and left alone, trusts in God and continues in supplications and prayers night and day.

(1 Timothy 5:6 NKJV) But she who lives in pleasure is dead while she lives.

She is totally alone – Same true today

She is totally alone. It was sad but in ancient days, a woman in this position would often have to turn to prostitution to support herself. Today it may not be prostitution as we know it, but she ends up marrying a jerk just so she can be taken care of. There are women like that all around us today. God says protect them for me. The same is true for us today at no matter their age, we need to protect women who feel helpless from marrying some loser because they feel hopeless and helpless.

If that is you today, or you know someone, tell them trust in the Lord, pray night and day until God Himself takes care of you.

Continues in supplications and prayers night and day.

But here we see she is to totally trust in God. She is a woman of prayer, she trust in God to provide for her and she prays for others, she is not just self centered.

Now for back to these widows, they prayed night and day, most likely she can't sleep because of the loneliness of the lost husband, so she spends that time seeking the Lord. For us also, don't miss those middle of the night prayer time, when you can't sleep. Don't count sheep, talk to the Shepherd. Don't watch TV, pray, take advantage of those special times of prayer.

Verse five: I'm reminded of Second Kings chapter, 19 verse 29 and 30, speaks of "Deep roots downward. Bear fruit upward," to which we can easily just say, "There will be no visible fruit without invisible roots." Christian, you got to sink your roots deep in places that no one can see. That's going to be your personal study time and your personal prayer time. It's the invisible place to the world. But as the roots go deep, there will be a natural outcome. The law of reaping and sowing, which we always put on the negative, but there's a positive spin of reaping and sowing. We reap to the deep spiritual things of the Lord, his word and prayer, there will be a great ... We sow to that, there'll be a great reaping of fruit from that.

2 Kings 19:29–30 (NKJV) ²⁹ 'This shall be a sign to you: You shall eat this year such as grows of itself, And in the second year what springs from the same; Also in the third year sow and reap, Plant vineyards and eat the fruit of them. ³⁰ And the remnant who have escaped of the house of Judah Shall again take root downward, And bear fruit upward.

2 Corinthians 9:6 (NKJV) ⁶ But this I say: He who sows sparingly will also reap sparingly, and he who sows bountifully will also reap bountifully.

(1 Timothy 5:6 NKJV) But she who lives in pleasure is dead while she lives.

If she is a carnal person, she is not to be taken care of by the church. It is a very sad site when I see older woman trying to dress and behave like they are 20 again. Elderly ladies should carry a beauty in their maturity. But worse are the middle-aged woman, who try to act and dress like they are 20, it is so so sad.

(1 Timothy 5:7 NKJV) And these things command, that they may be blameless.

(1 Timothy 5:8 NKJV) But if anyone does not provide for his own, and especially for those of his household, he has denied the faith and is worse than an unbeliever.

Verse eight: the summation: family takes care of family.

Kids it is payback time

Kids it is payback time, don't expect the government to take care of your parents, you have a responsibility to your aged parents. Now of course you any resources the government can provide, but ultimately your are responsible.

(1 Timothy 5:9 NKJV) Do not let a widow under sixty years old be taken into the number, and not unless she has been the wife of one man,

Verse nine: it says, "The age of 60," which if you put it into our terms today, it's relatively rather young. And so we have to, at times, look at scripture for the cultural context, and cultural context is the age of 60 2,000 years ago, that was quite an elderly age. The lifespan was nowhere near what it is today, average lifespan going into the '80s. That's glorious. Back then, with disease, put in the mathematical factoring of infant mortality, I mean, you'll hear numbers going as low as 30 and 40, but that's because many children didn't survive early age because of just the environment, so different from today with our great healthcare and medical system that we have. But you can see this infant mortality in some of the under-developed nations and see where the lifespan there can be 30, 40, 50 years. I think when they challenged Jesus about when he said, "I saw Abraham's day," and they said, "You're not even yet 50 years old." We know Jesus was 30, went to the cross at 33, that we know his age. And I think one of the reasons that we're reading that, that they're saying "You're not even 50," I don't think they were just putting that on a high end mark to make their point. I think man just was run down and living harder lives back then. But, point here today, is 60 was considered very much a late elderly age in that time, much different from today.

But there's still a point that's being made here that when a widow reaches such an elderly age, it's speaking how the inability to really do the manual things of life of lifting and carrying and going miles to the store and driving and these type of things. And that's the countering that's being made of the younger widows still have the ability to work, to care for the children, to do the menial work. And back then, and still today, heavy lifting work is exhausting and wears on the body, and there just comes a point where there's not enough physical strength to do these things. So that's the case that's being made here of the comparison of 60 and older to the younger widows

SIDE NOTE

V8 – Provide for Family: Just a word for husbands, I believe there is great wisdom in the preparing (as best of your ability) for your wife and children, for your death should you die early. A will, a life insurance policy, where the documents are they will need, names on accounts and possessions, etc. Prepare and provide as best you can.

(1 Timothy 5:10 NKJV) well reported for good works: if she has brought up children, if she has lodged strangers, if she has washed the saints' feet, if she has relieved the afflicted, if she has diligently followed every good work.

The Heart of God

These are not just facts on how to run to the church, but the very heart of God. God is going to tell us how much these widows mean to Him, therefore how much they should mean to us. I love studying the heart of God, so that my heart may change to be like his.

In Acts 4 we see a thriving church, and we see their heart, they were a heart of One *Acts 4:32–35 (NKJV)* ³² Now the multitude of those who believed were of one heart and one soul; neither did anyone say that any of the things he possessed was his own, but they had all things in common. ³³ And with great power the apostles gave witness to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus. And great grace was upon them all. ³⁴ Nor was there anyone among them who lacked; for all who were possessors of lands or houses sold them, and brought the proceeds of the things that were sold, ³⁵ and laid them at the apostles' feet; and they distributed to each as anyone had need.

And then in Acts 6, we see the focus is on the Apostles and it's often used, as it should be, as a proof text, the calling for the pastoral leadership to make sure that they are setting the proper time apart for the word and prayer, not that they are to be not ministering among the people themselves, but they need to be set apart to provide a feast and a meal and a spiritual oversight as we've been studying through these first three into four chapters of this Book of Timothy, a pastoral epistle, on how to minister to the church as a pastor, as a minister, as a leader.

Acts 6:1-4 (NKJV) ¹ Now in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplying, there arose a complaint against the Hebrews by the Hellenists, because their widows were neglected in the daily distribution. ² Then the twelve summoned the multitude of the disciples and said, "It is not desirable that we should leave the word of God and serve tables. ³ Therefore, brethren, seek out from among you seven men of good reputation, full of the Holy Spirit and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business; ⁴ but we will give ourselves continually to prayer and to the ministry of the word."

Because the root of the issue at hand was there were widows not properly being cared for, and the Apostles were making the point, "If we're spending this time in word and prayer, then that would make us neglect the ministry to the widows, the needy, the orphans, and the likes." The Apostles realize they are not taking care properly of the widows, the orphans, those in need because they were overstretched. And so was to devise a means as they would raise up these honorable men, as we read in Acts 6, who would take over the caring for the needs of the widows. Yes, there is instruction here, practicality here, but here, this church, there's a heart here too, and it's the heart of God that he sees the widows, those in need. It's the heart of God for the church to care for one another. It's family first. Why would the world look at the church as the pillar and ground of truth if they see that the church doesn't take care of its own, doesn't minister and provide and care for its own? But when they see what Jesus said, "By this, all will know that you are my disciples, by your love, one for another," that's going to be a place that the world is going to say, "I want to be part of that."

John 13:35 (NKJV) ³⁵ By this all will know that you are My disciples, if you have love for one another."

Acts 6: so often the direction of pastor conferences, pastors invest your time in the word and prayer. Be careful about church business and getting overstretched, but let it be seen and known there's the heart of God. Pastors, leaders, call the people to take care of one another, to love one another. And if you're a widow, an orphan, broken and lonely, could you see in Acts 6 very clearly that it's not a secondary ministry? God doesn't just say, "Who do I have that's left over from the primary ministries?" Look at the requirements that were called for these men to serve in this ministry: one, they had to be full of faith; and two, they had to be full of the Holy Spirit. These are the qualifications that came for widows and elderly, not secondary ministry, but a primary ministry that needs faith and the spirit of God upon it. God doesn't want just anyone. God wants the best for this ministry to handle his widows and the elderly. God sees you widows, orphans, broken, outcast, lonely, heart aching. God sees you, and he's going to provide the best for you.

Acts 6:5-7 (NKJV) ⁵ And the saying pleased the whole multitude. And they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and the Holy Spirit, and Philip, Prochorus, Nicanor, Timon, Parmenas, and Nicolas, a proselyte from Antioch, ⁶ whom they set before the apostles; and when they had prayed, they laid hands on them. ⁷ Then the word of God spread, and the number of the disciples multiplied greatly in Jerusalem, and a great many of the priests were obedient to the faith.

And I pray that God' raises up Steven's, in this church today. Men, women full of faith and full of the Holy Spirit who say, "Lord, here I am. Use me. Send me into that ministry."

Let me share something with you, it's along the same line, but it is somewhat off topic, but how powerful the two are. So I will teach them as one. I remember when I first got saved, I went to a Calvary chapel, a great Calvary chapel in the whole country. And God blessed that Calvary chapel in the ministry it was to me in the development for me. But I'll just be honest, when I walked in that church, after being freshly saved out of the world and I was deep in the world and all the things of the world. When I came into the church, they were afraid of me. They were pretty mature, established church. God was in the beginning of starting a great work of the move of the Spirit. Somewhat of a revival, but when I came, they were pretty much established in their way, but God broke through later, but here's my story for before and then they didn't know what to do with me. I literally made them afraid. They were afraid of my worldliness. They were afraid that I might date some of their women, young, single gals. They're afraid I might, who knows, corrupt their mature, Well-established, young adult fellowship. And as I would try to break through, and break in, and become part of something, one group or another, each group would push me away. Each group would make themselves feel like they were doing something, but if they were true in their heart, they would come to the realization they didn't want anything to do with me. So they were trying to push me away into something that would be convenient for them.

So there was like literally four or five different groups that were kind of tight knit that I would try to introduce myself and open myself up to them hopefully that they would invite me in to their times together, dinners, lunch after service, or even just the small group of circle. And I would come up and they'd be standing in the circle. And again, these were multiple groups. Yeah, let's be honest, clique-ish, and I would come into their circle with my smile and say, "Hi, I'm Ray. I just gave my life to the Lord. And I know God's calling me, and this is to be my church. I just want to introduce myself." And they would all give me the smile back and the hello and the greeting, but never fail, one of them would say, "Hey, I want to introduce you to some other people." And they would take me and walk me over to the circle that was the circle of people who I will honestly just say, they were cast offs. They were disabled. They were slow of mind. They were forgotten in this world. They were left out and they would take me over to that circle of a handful of people and introduce me to that circle, then leave me in that circle and walk away. And for the first time it happened, I was like, oh, this is great. Hi, and I make friends with these people. And then a week or two later, I would go into another new circle and the same thing would happen. They'd smile. And they'd say, hi, then they go, hey, we got some people we'd love for you to meet. And they'd take me back over to that circle of the forgotten, of the lonely, the castoffs. And after about the third time it happened, I came to the realization of what was happening. That they didn't want me in their circle and clique. I was too raw for them. I was too worldly, fresh out of the world, whatever it may be. But I didn't fit their mold. And they'd take me over to the place that they really didn't want to be themselves. And so, you know what, after a handful times of that happening, I found myself then this is who I'll hang out with. I will love on these people. I will befriend these people. I will give myself to these people. And you know, it just became one of the most beautiful things in my life. No doubting a shaping of my ministry today. And the beauty of it because God was giving me His heart, that this is who I love. I see these people and I want to minister to these people and it was quick and it was easy for me to say then that's where I want to be. And what I want to say about the amazing thing that would happen thereafter, is people in need have needs. They would need somebody who was whole and strong to come help clean stuff out of their living room, to pick them up and take them to the doctor, to help get them to church, to take them out to lunch just to hear what's on their heart, that break that moment or those, even if it's just an hour or two of the loneliness of going back into a home that's all by themselves. And it was just wonderful blessing time. And they truly became just dear to my heart. And I was dear to them.

And you know, interestingly, over time as the other people in the other circles would see and watch, they kind of weren't afraid of me anymore. I kind of was there long enough. I wasn't raw to them anymore. And so invitations were being open for me to come join their circle, to go out to their lunch, and whatever it may be. But you know what? It was just a place I never really, truly wanted to be, because I wanted to be right where God put me and developed me. And I had said earlier, it was the beginning of a move of the Spirit of God in the church. I was kind of in the front end of it and I got to watch it explode quickly. Go from a church of 300 to a thousand in just a few years. But as new young adults would get saved fresh out of the world, raw out of the world, they would somehow, some way just find themselves in this circle that I was with these people. And it was a joy overflowing of their heart to not only be saved and set apart by the Lord, but as quick as they were set apart and saved and brought into the relationship with the Lord, immediately they were getting to be hands and feet and heart of God. When it came time to go help one of the people who were broken or had disability, it was no longer I, it was several people coming to help clean houses out, clear junk, and things that just accumulated because they did not have the strength or even the wherewithal of what do you do with this stuff? How do you get this stuff out, and broken furniture, broken appliances, broken stuff. And there we are, a handful of us going over, spending hours and just feel with the joy of the Lord, to be used by the Lord, and then to then go out and we would get a bite to eat or bring food in, and we'd all just eat there together at that home. And it was just beautiful. We became such a wonderful, wonderful tight knit group, but we had known what it was like to be on the outside. And so no one was ever excluded or outcast.

We received all as they were, exactly as they were.

So I have a word for anyone today. It's two words with an or in between. Victim or victorious? You're going to come into a church, even this church, and someone's going to offend you. Someone's going to outcast you. Someone's going to not respond the way you think. And you get to make a decision when that happens, if you want to categorize yourself and classify yourself as a victim of look what they did to me, and then use that, and I'm going to say it real clear, as an excuse to say, that's why I don't go to church. Or that's why I'm not going to serve. That's why I'm not going to be part of this or that. They're all hypocrites, and the fact that the matter and the truth be told, yes, the church is full of hypocrites. And I won't be the first ever say that I haven't been guilty. But hear this, you can be victorious in that you can say, you know what? I'm going to take what hurt me, I'm not going to allow it to make me be a victim, but I'm going to be victorious, because what hurt me, I know inevitably will hurt others and I can see it now. And God has given me the eyes to see it, therefore He'll give me the heart to respond to it, and I can turn what hurt me into a victory. And that's what I did. When I was outcast and when I was pushed away, they didn't know what to do with me because I was too raw. I could have been a victim. I could have used it as an excuse to go back to the bars, go back to my carnal lifestyle, but instead I says, you know what? This is what God's doing in my life. And I'm going to lean into it fully. And I turned it into then one of the greatest victories and still today, a continual victorious story. God gave me His heart, as he gave me his eyes to see the lonely, the broken, the heart aching people. And that's what you get to decide when something happens inside the church that you're hurt or harmed, you can either allow yourself to become a victim, or you can allow it to become a place of victory that you got the heart of God and you said, I'm going to make sure, although this person may do that, I'm going to be the counter to it. And I'm going to provide a place that ministers to people in their time of need. And so the word, victim or victory.

(1 Timothy 5:11 NKJV) But refuse the younger widows; for when they have begun to grow wanton against Christ, they desire to marry,
(1 Timothy 5:12 NKJV) having condemnation because they have cast off their first faith.
(1 Timothy 5:13 NKJV) And besides they learn to be idle, wandering about from house to house, and not only idle but also gossips and busybodies, saying things which they ought not.
(1 Timothy 5:14 NKJV) Therefore I desire that the younger widows marry, bear children, manage the house, give no opportunity to the adversary to speak reproachfully.
(1 Timothy 5:15 NKJV) For some have already turned aside after Satan.

This passage is not saying they should or must remarry, but what it is saying is the church would be mistaken to bring them in, because they are still strong and energetic, that it would actually be detrimental to them to have all that idle time on their hands. It is also giving a clear word, that remarriage is ok, that they do not have to stay a widow for the rest of their lives.

Verse 12 tells what a younger widow should be doing by acknowledging of what a godly widow did if she was to be taken in, what her life was and represented. And we can read through those things back there in verse nine, that she was,

- "A one woman man."
- In verse 10, "She did good works."
- Verse 10, "She invested and brought up her children in the ways of the Lord."
- Verse 10, "She had a heart for strangers and even took them in and lodged them as they traveled." Remember there was no Motel 6s when people traveled. They were looking and hoping and praying for the hospitality of strangers, especially when believers would travel from one area to another that other believers would take them in.
- Going on in verse 10, "She washed the saints' feet." She was just a servant to refresh the people of the church.
- Verse 10, "She relieved the afflicted." She had a heart for those who were afflicted and bound and hurting.

- And then it says, “She diligently followed every good work.” “She was busy,” Matthew 6:33, “about the King’s business.” She was an ambassador.

This is the calling for the younger widows. But you know what? It's a beautiful listing of the heart that God is looking for in all of his people when we get to this simple statement of family first. Is this a list that we can go down and say, "Yes. These are the things I've done. I've lodged strangers." Or maybe not necessarily in your home for a week, but you lodged them with a meal or a coffee or just a phone call. You did good works. You washed the feet of the saints. You were investing in the Kingdom. It would be known and seen that these widows did these good works because it would have been known and seen of the works that they did inside the church, because it was family first. They were ministering to the family first.

1 Timothy 5:9–10 (NKJV) ⁹ Do not let a widow under sixty years old be taken into the number, *and not unless she has been the wife of one man,* ¹⁰ well reported for good works: if she has brought up children, if she has lodged strangers, if she has washed the saints' feet, if she has relieved the afflicted, if she has diligently followed every good work.

Just what a wonderful word and tasks for all of us to review what God sees and counts important in this world compared to what the world counts and sees as important.

And it's family first.

(1 Timothy 5:16 NKJV) If any believing man or woman has widows, let them relieve them, and do not let the church be burdened, that it may relieve those who are really widows.

Genuine Christian faith begins in the family.

We see the family in verse 4, 8, and 16. The family is responsible for their family, for raising the children up in Christ, and supporting their widows. Genuine Christian faith begins in the family. It isn't just financial reasons, but the caliber of that type of godly woman should be in the home, influencing the family, the kids and grandkids.

The Thought in Our Heart

The thought in our heart should be how do I really treat people, how do I really view them. Do I care about them, do I know that the devil is after them, do I know if they are hungry, or have just lost a loved one. Today thousands of people will walk into churches to never return, because they felt that no one cared.

God gave all this space in His Word just so His widows would be taken care of.

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Passage: 1 Timothy 5:17 – 6:2
Title: Giving Honor

1 Timothy 5:17–6:2 (NKJV) ¹⁷ Let the elders who rule well be counted worthy of double honor, especially those who labor in the word and doctrine. ¹⁸ For the Scripture says, “You shall not muzzle an ox while it treads out the grain,” and, “The laborer is worthy of his wages.” ¹⁹ Do not receive an accusation against an elder except from two or three witnesses. ²⁰ Those who are sinning rebuke in the presence of all, that the rest also may fear. ²¹ I charge you before God and the Lord Jesus Christ and the elect angels that you observe these things without prejudice, doing nothing with partiality. ²² Do not lay hands on anyone hastily, nor share in other people’s sins; keep yourself pure. ²³ No longer drink only water, but use a little wine for your stomach’s sake and your frequent infirmities. ²⁴ Some men’s sins are clearly evident, preceding them to judgment, but those of some men follow later. ²⁵ Likewise, the good works of some are clearly evident, and those that are otherwise cannot be hidden. ¹ Let as many bondservants as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honor, so that the name of God and His doctrine may not be blasphemed. ² And those who have believing masters, let them not despise them because they are brethren, but rather serve them because those who are benefited are believers and beloved. Teach and exhort these things.

Here today we open the Word of God..... THE WORD OF GOD, that in the beginning the earth was without form and void, the Spirit was hovering (moving) over the earth, and the earth was still without form and void (empty), then GOD SPOKE, THE WORD OF GOD Spoke, and the earth began to take shape, form, gather, light came, life came, fruit was birthed! Because that is what the Word of God, infused with God (the Spirit) does when it is spoken and inspired and infused..... it produces light to separate darkness, it breaths life into empty (even dead things), and it produces fruit to all that is attached to that Word.

Genesis 1:1–5 (NKJV) ¹ In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. ² The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters. ³ Then God said, “Let there be light”; and there was light. ⁴ And God saw the light, that it was good; and God divided the light from the darkness. ⁵ God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. So the evening and the morning were the first day.

Here today we open the Word of God. We will read of in our passage today, the giving of honor (respect) to the leaders (pastors and elders) God puts over a ministry and leaders (bosses and owners) in the workplace. Why do I feel that this passage is so deeply significant? Well of course because it is the Word of God, it is God speaking; and He will speak two things that are two of, if not the two hardest things to do.

1. Submit and give honor (respect) to elders (pastors and church leadership) when we don’t want to heed the Word that is being taught and spoken because it counters what our flesh, in some cases a personal sin we don’t want to separate from, and the “pride” of life that is in all man.
2. But the second.... Work, possibly, probably, the hardest place to stay humble, to give honor to a boss/manager who is ill-deserving of it.... Quite possibly the greatest tester, revealer, of how much pride is really in us, and how much pride really needs to be dealt with and rid of in our lives. I have always been amazed at myself, of how I can be so easy going at the church, at home, etc.... but then watch pride raise it’s ugly head in me in the workplace. I think many here today can relate and we will discuss why that is, and what God expects of us and why.

1 John 2:16–17 (NKJV) ¹⁶ For all that is in the world—the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life—is not of the Father but is of the world. ¹⁷ And the world is passing away, and the lust of it; but he who does the will of God abides forever.

Proverbs 29:23 (NKJV) ²³ A man’s pride will bring him low, But the humble in spirit will retain honor.

Proverbs 16:18 (NKJV) ¹⁸ Pride goes before destruction, And a haughty spirit before a fall.

The title of the message is “Giving Honor”.

The outline (1 Timothy 5:17 – 6:2):

- Giving Honor to the Church Leaders (5:17-25)
- Giving Honor to the Work Managers (6:1-2)

Prayer:

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do His mighty work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Giving Honor to the Church Leaders (17-25)

Now the treatment of the Leaders in the Church. Remember as we have studied, the two barriers that God puts up to protect His people from deceiving spirits and doctrine of demons, is: The Word of God, and Godly Leadership.

(1 Timothy 5:17 NKJV) Let the elders who rule well be counted worthy of double honor, especially those who labor in the word and doctrine.

Verse 17. As we study through the Prophecy Update every month, we always have a section for apostasy and the great deception, the falling away of the church. It's amazing to me how false prophets and feel-good teachers get double honor today. They get massive book sales and praise and adorations well over and beyond the true shepherds. If you look up on the book sale, it's the pastors who would identify themselves more as life coaches or inspirators, more than pastor-teachers, but their book sales go through the roof. Wow. The true shepherds are laboring to make ends meet. It's all just a sign of the times.

2 Timothy 4:3-4 (NKJV) ³ For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but according to their own desires, because they have itching ears, they will heap up for themselves teachers; ⁴ and they will turn their ears away from the truth, and be turned aside to fables.

Verse 17 says to rule well. The key word there is well. So if an elder is not ruling well, if there is something subject to be looked into, whether that be elder, pastor, support person, if they haven't ruled well and served well, they're not exempt from being called out on their personal sin. But, apart from that here is the calling to "respect" and honor.

And so as we read a whole section like this, it very much comes out as a place of defense for the elder, the shepherd, the pastor. But let's not forget, this is Paul speaking to Timothy and there's an underlying current that flows through all of this. God's calling Timothy to be above reproach. God's calling Timothy to set himself apart. God's calling Timothy to be blameless. And so if you're going to be in ministry, and when I talked to young men in the ministry, I say it very clearly and firmly, a continual reminder to them of, be ye blameless before the Lord and people and God will protect your reputation because you have. So there's a continual place of, I may be before man, but more so I am before God in the ministry that I'm doing.

1 Timothy 3:10 (NKJV) ¹⁰ But let these also first be tested; then let them serve as deacons, being found blameless.

(1 Timothy 5:18 NKJV) For the Scripture says, "You shall not muzzle an ox while it treads out the grain," and, "The laborer is worthy of his wages."

Quoting:

(Deuteronomy 25:4 KJV) Thou shalt not muzzle the ox when he treadeth out the corn.

Paul would say, "Hey, are we the only ones that can't bring our spouses on our mission trip? It seems to be okay for everyone else but us." What was happening there was the people were laying charge on Paul that it was one thing that Peter was being supported when he went on his missionary journeys and was able to take his wife. And here we read that the worker is worthy of his wages, but as we've studied, it's family first and I think there's a danger when families get split over ministry because of this mindset of the church that the worker isn't worthy of double honor. And on top of that, Paul says is he and Barnabas the only ones who have to keep working, who can't be supported by the ministry they work to plow and sow and that produces fruit.

1 Corinthians 9:1–14 (NKJV) ¹ Am I not an apostle? Am I not free? Have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? Are you not my work in the Lord? ² If I am not an apostle to others, yet doubtless I am to you. For you are the seal of my apostleship in the Lord. ³ My defense to those who examine me is this: ⁴ Do we have no right to eat and drink? ⁵ Do we have no right to take along a believing wife, as do also the other apostles, the brothers of the Lord, and Cephas? ⁶ Or is it only Barnabas and I who have no right to refrain from working? ⁷ Who ever goes to war at his own expense? Who plants a vineyard and does not eat of its fruit? Or who tends a flock and does not drink of the milk of the flock? ⁸ Do I say these things as a mere man? Or does not the law say the same also? ⁹ For it is written in the law of Moses, "You shall not muzzle an ox while it treads out the grain." Is it oxen God is concerned about? ¹⁰ Or does He say it altogether for our sakes? For our sakes, no doubt, this is written, that he who plows should plow in hope, and he who threshes in hope should be partaker of his hope. ¹¹ If we have sown spiritual things for you, is it a great thing if we reap your material things? ¹² If others are partakers of this right over you, are we not even more? Nevertheless we have not used this right, but endure all things lest we hinder the gospel of Christ. ¹³ Do you not know that those who minister the holy things eat of the things of the temple, and those who serve at the altar partake of the offerings of the altar? ¹⁴ Even so the Lord has commanded that those who preach the gospel should live from the gospel.

I put double honor in. He and his wife, he and his family at that matter. An awesome ministry team of husband and wife are going to do twice as much in the mission field. A husband and wife who are together, then are relieved of that burden of being away and being separated which can have an impact on the ministry or the mission that one is called to. But I think there's a place also, of course, that sometimes solo is good for various reasons and there's nothing wrong with that. It's whatever the Lord chooses. But as Paul would say, are we not allowed to bring our spouses on the mission field.

So as with Paul and Barnabas, it seems the same was put on Timothy, that they were saying hey you shouldn't get a salary from the church, you should be working and being a financial burden. Probably they may be pointing back to that Paul often worked making tents, and that is what Timothy should be doing. Paul is telling Timothy and reminding Timothy, that God said the worker is worthy of his wages, so don't let people in the church there in Ephesus put a trip on you that you have to be working a night job Timothy. Again, Acts 6, they are to study the Word so they can provide not a side dish of a sermon, but a buffet:

Acts 6:2–4 (NKJV) ² Then the twelve summoned the multitude of the disciples and said, "It is not desirable that we should leave the word of God and serve tables. ³ Therefore, brethren, seek out from among you seven men of good reputation, full of the Holy Spirit and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business; ⁴ but we will give ourselves continually to prayer and to the ministry of the word."

Verse 18. The ox ate the food it labored as it was treading and threshing. You just see such an efficiency that God is speaking is that they partake of the same food, the same blessing that they tread and thresh for without having to go elsewhere to do that and make tents and the like.

But let that be known. Sometimes God calls pastors to make tents. And I think, as we look at the Apostle Paul, what more can we say? So the pastor has to hear the voice of God, what he's being called to do.

Acts 18:1–4 (NKJV) ¹ After these things Paul departed from Athens and went to Corinth. ² And he found a certain Jew named Aquila, born in Pontus, who had recently come from Italy with his wife Priscilla (because Claudius had commanded all the Jews to depart from Rome); and he came to them. ³ So, because he was of the same trade, he stayed with them and worked; for by occupation they were tentmakers. ⁴ And he reasoned in the synagogue every Sabbath, and persuaded both Jews and Greeks.

The Pastor and church worker are worth their wages. Now the Pastor should never live above his people, neither should he live below them. Now if you are a pastor or laborer in a church remember that people are providing your salary, therefore you will be subject to more inspection

and criticism, don't buy just because you can afford, you have to live modestly so as not to cause your people to stumble.

The Pastor needs to be studying the Word and praying for his people. He shouldn't be looking for side work to make ends meet, if he has to do that, the ministry will suffer, more specifically the people will suffer.

Acts 6:2-4 (NKJV) ² Then the twelve summoned the multitude of the disciples and said, "It is not desirable that we should leave the word of God and serve tables. ³ Therefore, brethren, seek out from among you seven men of good reputation, full of the Holy Spirit and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business; ⁴ but we will give ourselves continually to prayer and to the ministry of the word."

The laborer: labor is work, it is hard work. The study of the Word is hard work. Prayer is spiritual warfare, it is hard work. After the studying and prayer is done, then it is the preparation to deliver the message so it reaches the people, that is hard work.

Pastor's / laborers / teachers – in order for the ministry to happen the teaching of the Word must happen first so you need to protect your time in order for the message to be delivered. Minister, never miss the ministry that happens after the teaching of the Word. Now if you don't prepare well, then the ministry after the teaching will suffer likewise. Guard your time, people will eat your study and prayer time up if you allow them to, they don't realize how much time you need to study and pray, they usually think you are some super saint and the teaching and preaching just happen.

You need time for the Word to soak into you so that it becomes a part of you. Family support the laborer.

(1 Timothy 5:19 NKJV) Do not receive an accusation against an elder except from two or three witnesses.

Verse 19 – do not receive an accusation unless two or three witnesses. This is reference to the instruction from Deuteronomy 19, and it should be noted how great the consequences were upon those giving a false-witness. But how do you have two or three witnesses and they not come together because they were gossiping together? Well in Deuteronomy 19, they all saw the offense at the same time, just as we witness a car accident today and give witness to the police what we saw, and all the witnesses stories should align. God uses this passage to warn shepherds, your sin will find you out if you do not remain blameless.

Deuteronomy 19:15-21 (NKJV) ¹⁵ "One witness shall not rise against a man concerning any iniquity or any sin that he commits; by the mouth of two or three witnesses the matter shall be established. ¹⁶ If a false witness rises against any man to testify against him of wrongdoing, ¹⁷ then both men in the controversy shall stand before the LORD, before the priests and the judges who serve in those days. ¹⁸ And the judges shall make careful inquiry, and indeed, if the witness is a false witness, who has testified falsely against his brother, ¹⁹ then you shall do to him as he thought to have done to his brother; so you shall put away the evil from among you. ²⁰ And those who remain shall hear and fear, and hereafter they shall not again commit such evil among you. ²¹ Your eye shall not pity: life shall be for life, eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot.

But the Lord puts a safeguard in for the shepherds to protect them from people who have the proverbial axe-to-grind against the leader, who want to attack them because of their pride, or upset they are not being recognized as they think they should, or resentful for the Word that is convicting them and their refusal to repent. So God is providing a manner by which to protect the shepherds from the false attacks, and the time wasting and draining they bring, and to point back that is the person laying charge doesn't and isn't following the scriptural commandment, they are clearly in the flesh and should not be entertained on their unbiblical actions.

What if it is privately a one-on-one sin? Then Matthew 18. What if it is sin, but unproveable because it is one-on-one? Just know, judgement begins in the house of the Lord, and although gracious and patient, God will expose the shepherd who misrepresents Him. Every church leader should tremble at that realization, and fear the Lord for His holiness and righteousness and justice. God will not be mocked!

Matthew 18:15–17 (NKJV) ¹⁵ "Moreover if your brother sins against you, go and tell him his fault between you and him alone. If he hears you, you have gained your brother. ¹⁶ But if he will not hear, take with you one or two more, that 'by the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established.' ¹⁷ And if he refuses to hear them, tell it to the church. But if he refuses even to hear the church, let him be to you like a heathen and a tax collector.

Psalms 19:9 (NKJV) ⁹ The fear of the LORD is clean, enduring forever; The judgments of the LORD are true and righteous altogether.

1 Peter 4:17–18 (NKJV) ¹⁷ For the time has come for judgment to begin at the house of God; and if it begins with us first, what will be the end of those who do not obey the gospel of God? ¹⁸ Now "If the righteous one is scarcely saved, Where will the ungodly and the sinner appear?"

Galatians 6:7 (NKJV) ⁷ Do not be deceived, God is not mocked; for whatever a man sows, that he will also reap.

If someone comes up to you to talk about the pastor, elder, or anyone (period), any brother or sister, you need to be bold else you get drawn into their sin, and will be guilty before the Lord; you need to stop them right there and say have you talked to the pastor/elder/person about this? If not you need to exercise Matthew 18. And that most always will stop and quench the unbiblical exercise of gossip in its track.

I would say to any pastor, church leader, who is treading near the edge and you know it... Turn now, come back to the fear of the Lord you once had, because He will not be mocked, and your sin will find you out, and the fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom:

Galatians 6:7 (NKJV) ⁷ Do not be deceived, God is not mocked; for whatever a man sows, that he will also reap.

Numbers 32:23 (NKJV) ²³ But if you do not do so, then take note, you have sinned against the LORD; and be sure your sin will find you out.

Proverbs 9:10 (NKJV) ¹⁰ "The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom, And the knowledge of the Holy One is understanding.

Now what I see over and over is that what they (these attacks) do come with a subtle spiritual approach, rarely are they full frontal attack. They slip in looking for gullible. They slip in to find somebody with tender hearts and so they look for those type of people. It's easy to find in a church that's full of gracious and kind people. And so the person coming against the elder, they come seeming so spiritual but the fact is, they're just full of carnality. They have an agenda, a motive with an end result in mind and it's absolute destruction of the elder, the pastor, that servant of God, to which the Lord says, "Do not lay a charge against another man's servant." And so just that very fact, the way they do it, they come in spirituality, but their actions are full of carnality.

Romans 14:4 (NKJV) ⁴ Who are you to judge another's servant? To his own master he stands or falls. Indeed, he will be made to stand, for God is able to make him stand.

The reputation of the pastor/elder is all they have, destroy it, you destroy them. As in Biblical order, nothing less than two or three witnesses to receive and accusation. Never listen to the slander against the Pastor, even if it is in the name of "prayer or counsel". You are not to listen to it, turn aside and say I can't listen to this, unless there are 2-3 of you willing to stand together, and before the Pastor to make your claim. The enemy want so to destroy churches, and his tactics are many times to attack the head. By the way, personally I think a husband and wife equal one, so they don't qualify for 2, they need someone else who is willing to stand up and bring a charge.

We talked about Stephen last week, a man full of faith, the Spirit, and wisdom. He was lifted in power before man by God, we read in Acts 6 & 7 that he will be destroyed, killed, stoned for the powerful preaching and calling men to repent. He will be the first martyr on the other side of the cross because of his preaching that called for repentance. But how was he taken down? By so-called spiritual men, who stirred up others to join in their sin, all because they did not want to heed the Word of God and repent of their sins.

Acts 6:8–15 (NKJV) ⁸ And Stephen, full of faith and power, did great wonders and signs among the people. ⁹ Then there arose some from what is called the Synagogue of the Freedmen (Cyrenians, Alexandrians, and those from Cilicia and Asia), disputing with Stephen. ¹⁰ And they were not able to resist the wisdom and the Spirit by which he spoke. ¹¹ Then they secretly induced men to say, "We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses and God." ¹² And they

stirred up the people, the elders, and the scribes; and they came upon him, seized him, and brought him to the council. ¹³ They also set up false witnesses who said, "This man does not cease to speak blasphemous words against this holy place and the law; ¹⁴ for we have heard him say that this Jesus of Nazareth will destroy this place and change the customs which Moses delivered to us." ¹⁵ And all who sat in the council, looking steadfastly at him, saw his face as the face of an angel.

Acts 7:51–53 (NKJV) ⁵¹ "You stiff-necked and uncircumcised in heart and ears! You always resist the Holy Spirit; as your fathers did, so do you. ⁵² Which of the prophets did your fathers not persecute? And they killed those who foretold the coming of the Just One, of whom you now have become the betrayers and murderers, ⁵³ who have received the law by the direction of angels and have not kept it."

Verse 19. We are told in the Old Testament under the Levitical law and very much a wise law, it's the Mosaic law, that if someone stole from someone else, there was a restitution, not just a one-for-one, but a four-to-one, a many-to-one. And what we see there was if you steal, there's a price to pay for it and it's not just what have I got to lose, but the loss will be great because when you're caught, you'll pay a greater payback.

Luke 19:8 (NKJV) ⁸ Then Zacchaeus stood and said to the Lord, "Look, Lord, I give half of my goods to the poor; and if I have taken anything from anyone by false accusation, I restore fourfold."

Exodus 22:1 (NKJV) ¹ "If a man steals an ox or a sheep, and slaughters it or sells it, he shall restore five oxen for an ox and four sheep for a sheep."

I think there's a great application of that that is so overlooked. I'm not just making the application when someone lays a charge against an elder, a leader, the pastor and the likes but I'm talking everyone. What I'm talking about is character and reputation stealing. When someone goes out and they talk poorly about another person, they misrepresent them, they lay a charge against God's servant, God's person, God's beloved and they say all kinds of wrong regarding them out of whatever the situation because they were angry, upset. They felt that they were wronged in some way and later find out that they were the wrong and what they did was wrong. So what happens is they come back, and God bless them for this, they ask for forgiveness, they ask for reconciliation and they said, can we make things right?

But what most always and I say most always, what I see and what I have experienced is that the person doesn't pay the restitution in that they don't go back to all the people that they went to and gossiped or came for prayer or came for counseling, but deep in their heart, they were there to tear down and destroy a person. What I see is they don't go back and go find the one, two, the 15, the 20 people that they went and spewed all this destruction and tearing down and say, you know what? I was wrong. What I said about them was wrong. I'm guilty. And I'm coming to you to say that I was wrong and ask you to forgive me but also to remove the image that I put in your mind of that person and their reputation and their character. I need to tell you that what I said is wrong. I was wrong and so much so.

They are the ones who had the integrity. They're the ones who had the godly nature. And I want to point them back to you in such a way. Please forgive me for what I've done. And so my point again, rarely is a restitution. A person feels good that they reconciled. They made things right. And many times what that leaves open is that when other people who were given the misinformation, when they see the reconciliation, they're led to believe that the person who was the attacker, the gossip, the destroyer of reputation, that that person is given grace. That they're the ones who forgave, that they're the ones who took the low road and therefore they're never made straight what really happened. And hence my point of restitution wasn't paid because a reputation was stolen and it was never repaid to all the people that it was stolen from.

Verse 19. A Christian has no idea how far their words travel when they talk negatively and critically and attackingly on God's shepherds, whether it's the pastors or the elders and I'll speak clearly. Whether a spouse speaking about their spouse or children speaking about their parents or someone just speaking about other Christians, how far that criticality travels.

But when it comes into the church especially, and the attack upon the leadership of criticality and the likes, people having their personal attack of what they're unhappy about and they're looking

for their own self to be vindicated or they're looking for a tearing down or even a revenge. And so they attack the leadership, they attack the church and they just totally miss how far it goes. How it impacts marriages, how it impacts the children. And I'm sorry to say that I have an account I can put specific numbers on of people who have laid charge and attack against the church, against the leadership, against myself as pastor. They got what they wanted. They got people to leave the church with them. They got people to go their way with them but then years later, they don't put the string together how well the marriage was doing, how strong the children were when they were in inside the church. But when that person was able to rip them out, they left a strength, they left a stronghold, they left a firm foundation. They left a place where the Word of God was honored.

And within years, sometimes months, divorces happen. Children pay the price in every divorce. Children go wayward because they have lost all their friends. It's so sad to watch it and it's worth a word. I know I speak to a church. I know I speak on the radio and I know people are listening in their cars. I know people are listening over podcasts right now and I just speak broadly. Your words travel way further than you ever realize.

(1 Timothy 5:20 NKJV) Those who are sinning rebuke in the presence of all, that the rest also may fear.

Remember the beginning of our study was not just the teaching of the pastoral epistle of a pastor, how he is to manage the church, but this letter made it into the Bible not just for pastors but for all the people of the church so that they can see and hear God's intent for the handling of the church and discipline. And so when they see and hear that discipline is happening in the church by the leadership, then they can know that it's being handled according to God's way and God's plan for it to be handled and the church can take comfort. They're being protected.

If there is sin in the camp, whether in leadership or membership, it has to be dealt with.

The Ananias and Sapphira effect (Acts 5:1-11), it is purifying the church. Great fear was brought upon the church. The same will happen in the church when sin, that is un-repented of is exposed and punished. Now that may not be seeker-sensitive appealing, but it is necessary in the life of the church.

Acts 5:1-11 (NKJV) ¹ But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession. ² And he kept back part of the proceeds, his wife also being aware of it, and brought a certain part and laid it at the apostles' feet. ³ But Peter said, "Ananias, why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Spirit and keep back part of the price of the land for yourself? ⁴ While it remained, was it not your own? And after it was sold, was it not in your own control? Why have you conceived this thing in your heart? You have not lied to men but to God." ⁵ Then Ananias, hearing these words, fell down and breathed his last. So great fear came upon all those who heard these things. ⁶ And the young men arose and wrapped him up, carried him out, and buried him. ⁷ Now it was about three hours later when his wife came in, not knowing what had happened. ⁸ And Peter answered her, "Tell me whether you sold the land for so much?" She said, "Yes, for so much." ⁹ Then Peter said to her, "How is it that you have agreed together to test the Spirit of the Lord? Look, the feet of those who have buried your husband are at the door, and they will carry you out." ¹⁰ Then immediately she fell down at his feet and breathed her last. And the young men came in and found her dead, and carrying her out, buried her by her husband. ¹¹ So great fear came upon all the church and upon all who heard these things.

Church, gang, you see the world needs to see that someone takes sin seriously. If the church doesn't take sin seriously, then how can the world. When we take sin seriously, it gives credibility to the Gospel of Jesus Christ. What about grace and mercy you may ask? There comes a time when the church has to say enough, we have to purify for the sake of the others.

(1 Corinthians 5:5 NKJV) deliver such a one to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that his spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

(1 Corinthians 5:6 NKJV) Your glorying is not good. Do you not know that a little leaven leavens the whole lump?

(1 Corinthians 5:7 NKJV) Therefore purge out the old leaven, that you may be a new lump, since you truly are unleavened. For indeed Christ, our Passover, was sacrificed for us.

(1 Timothy 5:21 NKJV) I charge you before God and the Lord Jesus Christ and the elect angels that you observe these things without prejudice, doing nothing with partiality.

Verse 21. Paul's sending the message to young Timothy to not let people, especially influential people, especially the people with the strongest opinion or the loudest voice, run the church, guide the church, influence the church, but that the Word of God guides the church and is the spiritual influence.

A challenge to all, especially in the ministry, do we give more grace to the influential people in the church. Also be careful minister when you are invited to share in the lifestyle of rich and famous, or influential. It is easy to be drawn in to enjoy the comforts, but is their lifestyle really fitting for a minister of the Word.

And there's an honor due in the home. It's the honor of the parent and children. It's your responsibility, requirement, expectation to honor them and respect them.

(1 Timothy 5:22 NKJV) Do not lay hands on anyone hastily, nor share in other people's sins; keep yourself pure.

Don't lay hands on too hastily. Paul is saying before you raise someone up and ordain them and put them in leadership, watch them for awhile, let them prove themselves out. If you can't serve then you can't lead, for ministry is service. Watch and wait, the Lord will prove them out.

If you keep yourself pure, then you keep yourself in the ministry, if you compromise, then you are out of the ministry. Sometimes being in the ministry means you can't do the things others are doing, even if it is all right.

Paul is telling Timothy, the honor due and elder, has to be because, they have served well, and proven themselves out well as prescribed in this whole pastoral epistle (see recap on chapter 2). [1 Timothy 5:17 \(NKJV\)](#) ¹⁷ *Let the elders who rule well be counted worthy of double honor, especially those who labor in the word and doctrine.*

(1 Timothy 5:23 NKJV) No longer drink only water, but use a little wine for your stomach's sake and your frequent infirmities.

(1 Timothy 5:24 NKJV) Some men's sins are clearly evident, preceding them to judgment, but those of some men follow later.

(1 Timothy 5:25 NKJV) Likewise, the good works of some are clearly evident, and those that are otherwise cannot be hidden.

Verse 23 when Timothy's told take a little wine because of his infirmity. We see that Timothy, he was trying to be so far above reproach that he didn't want anyone to lay a charge against him. And so we see as the pastor wasn't to be given to wine that he's misapplying that passage that he's given to wine means to be drinking in such a way to lose the control of your senses. But here Paul is saying, "Timothy, there's a good medical practice here. Take some wine to kill the bacteria that's in the water that you're drinking in that region." It's okay to apply wisdom of medicine. And so everyone gets to decide that today also, the wisdom of a medicine, the wisdom of the doctors. And I just say, as the Lord leads you, don't let someone else influence you, let God lead you on that decision.

[1 Timothy 3:3 \(NKJV\)](#) ³ *not given to wine, not violent, not greedy for money, but gentle, not quarrelsome, not covetous;*

We spoke about this in our previous studies. Simply Paul wasn't telling Timothy to go slam a few, but not to go to the point of allowing legalism to keep him from a clear good thing. Alcohol/wine would kill the microorganism and allow the water to be fit for drinking. The alcohol was for medicinal purposes. Today it would be like saying take some NyQuil if you have the flu, some PepsidAC if your stomach is upset.

Holiness is never impractical or lacking in common sense

Paul says to Timothy, you can't have the fear of what people think of you from living in freedom. You need medicine, then take it, don't worry what the people think or judge you.
(Proverbs 29:25 NKJV) The fear of man brings a snare, But whoever trusts in the LORD shall be safe.

Minister all over the world and country are living in bondage because they worry so much about being misunderstood. You can't live your life in someone else's mind. Paul says you know your heart. You take care of your character, and God will take care of your reputation.

Chapter 6

Giving Honor to the Work Managers (6:1-2)

What and how we are to be in the workplace.

(1 Timothy 6:1 NKJV) Let as many bondservants as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honor, so that the name of God and His doctrine may not be blasphemed.

(1 Timothy 6:2 NKJV) And those who have believing masters, let them not despise them because they are brethren, but rather serve them because those who are benefited are believers and beloved. Teach and exhort these things.

Remember we are the Church, and the Church is the pillar and ground of truth in the community, a city set on a hill, a light unto to the world:

1 Timothy 3:14–15 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.

Matthew 5:14 (NKJV) ¹⁴ "You are the light of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hidden.

Why – So God's Name not Blasphemed

Here, an exhortation to be faithful to our employer. Give them 40 hours of work for 40 hours of pay. Why are we called to work hard, so that no one may lay a charge against our Lord, and blaspheme Him because one of His children is a poor worker. We have read in chapter 3 and 5 how parents are to rule and guide their house/children so that no one in the community can blaspheme God for the poor witness of the children, well the same is true here, except that we are the children, God is the Father, and our poor work reflects on Him directly.

168 / 56 / 112 / 40% / 58%

Why does God put so much emphasis on our working, well for one reason, consider this. 168 hours in a week, we sleep for 56 of them, so that leaves 112 total hours a week of living. If you work 40hrs with 1hr lunch break, that is 45 hours a week, of the 112, that means 40% of your waking hours are at work. If you work 60 hrs a week with lunch, that is 58% of your waking hours spent working. That is why God speaks so much about our work and service to our employers in the Scriptures, it is such a large portion of our personal witness. What are you doing with your 40%.

The World Is Looking

The world is looking for reasons to believe, don't give them a reason not to.

Living Walking Talking Translation

We have the KJV, NKJV, NIV, NRSV, and you, the LWTT – the Living Walking Talking Translation. The world is looking for the answers to life, and we have the answers.

(2 Corinthians 3:2 NKJV) You are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read by all men;

Mocked – But God always Win

Now yes we will be mocked, ridiculed, even attacked or overlooked in the workplace because of our belief, just remember, God always wins, therefore you will too. Never give up on your witness

at work to your fellow co-workers, but nonetheless, never ever give them reason to blaspheme the name of the Lord, give them 40 for 40.

Giving Honor

Verse two, it's easy to love those who love us. So it's easy to love a boss who praises us, gives us fair and equitable pay, tells people how great a worker we are, tells us how great a worker we are. But let's be honest, there's a time where we've worked for, and some of you have some of the worst bosses in the world because this is their identity. This is where they get all of their acceptance in the world. This is where they get to have their power by being the boss. And some of them just aren't nice people. Some of them are totally selfish people and some of them really have no care for other people except themselves. So how do you love them, how do you honor them.

Of course we have to always come back to when the situation isn't the best, we have to remind ourselves who we ultimately work for. We work as onto the Lord. And then we have to say, why do we work? And we say, because this is the place that I provide for my family. This is the place where I pay my mortgage. This is how I put food on the table. This is how I pay for my kids' food, clothing, and gifts. And that starts putting things back into perspective because it's easy to lose the reverence and the giving of honor, when we forget the core reason why we work.

The key word here is bond servant. And there's two applications here and Paul's writing at a time of the Roman Empire, the history tells us 60 million people are a slave. The majority of the Jewish people being saved are under Roman occupation. Many of the Jews themselves who got saved are bond servants to their Jewish master who may not be saved. And they ended up having to become a servant because they racked up a debt they couldn't pay. And so when that happened, you would then have to pay with servitude. Much different from today, no bankruptcy and the guy who loaned the money is out the money. Now, if it was today and someone owed somebody \$30,000, the law in force, you'll go work for that person until you pay off that \$30,000. And usually it was just set on a period of time. So it wasn't hour for hour. It was just a period of years that you served 24/7.

A bond servant. Now that was a unique situation. It was a person who maybe because of their debt had to take on this servitude to pay off their debt. But there was an expectation and a requirement by law, Jewish and Roman that masters had to provide for their slaves. They had to give them food. They had to give them shelter. We read stories and we'll read it through the scriptures that some of them provided spouses for the single who came in single. And then when they had children, the master of the home provided for the children. And there's a whole bunch of clauses that we read through the scriptures and history about then when the person's servitude was up, they could leave, but they couldn't leave with their wife because their wife and their children were property of the owner. So then he could work more years to pay for their freedom and they could leave. Or this unique word that we hear of bond servant.

And a bond servant was I came in as a servant, I came in as a slave, but my boss, my owner, my master has been so good to me I don't want to leave. I want to stay. Where would I go? Why would I want to go anywhere else? And so they would take that person to the door of the home of the master, they would put his ear against the door frame and they would take a small awl, a whole puncher, and pierce the ear and put a ring on. And it was a sign and a symbol that I am a bond servant, a bond slave to my master.

It's a beautiful picture as we're called bond servants of Christ. When we come into a relationship with him, we don't want to go anywhere, but my ear to the door, put my ring on the ear, let the world know I am my beloved and my beloved is mine. That's the bond servant. But of course this word goes on as slaves. And so the application has given that even if you don't like your owner, your master, your boss, your employer, you are to give them honor because it's the order and structure that God sets. He expects order and structure. As many of us were appalled and shocked at scenes coming out of Afghanistan, one thing we did see was that the generals and

the commanders, they followed their order because if they didn't, it would have been a hundred times, a thousand times worse than what we did see. Because there would have been chaos beyond the chaos that we saw. There could have been friendly fire. There could have been friendly fire of death of our own countrymen because one commander not honoring and reverencing his commander, the Commander in Chief. I know that's hard to accept as we saw many of those images, but I am thankful that they obeyed. And some of them said afterwards, they only did it out of their obedience, even though they weren't in agreement with how it was being handled.

But I think work is definitely one of the greatest litmus tests and pressure points of our witness to the coworkers and to the boss, him or herself. Do we give them honor just as we're to give honor to the leadership of the church. There's an honor that's called upon us to give to the boss. We're not to be laying charges, making accusations, causing division and dissension, talking behind the boss's back, causing others to come into a bad attitude. And it's easy for every Christian to fall into this place, especially when they're being mistreated in the workplace. Hence why God gives this word in this passage. It's a pastoral epistle, but he's getting down into the workforce. There's a reason for it because God calls for order. And he's telling Timothy, uphold that order. Don't let the slaves, don't let the disgruntled employees bad mouth and complain because it's contagious and it can spread back into the church, that type of attitude. But I think it's what we read here. The great witness in the workplace.

Oh, don't get me wrong. It's okay to come and share your burden with your brothers, cast your cares upon each other and cast it upon the Lord saying how bad the workplace is. We carry each other's burden, but in the workplace, there's no place for it. We have to be above that. So when the world who's being mistreated too in the workplace, looks upon us who aren't complaining bitter resentment. They go, "What is it that you can have such an attitude?" And we get to say, "I am a Christian. That's why, because I am a Christian and this world isn't my home, this job isn't my identity. This job is a means to provide for my family and I give thanks for it. My reward is in my paycheck, not in my awards or accolades."

The more we complain, the more down than we get, the more bitter we get, the more resentful we get. Complaining and dwelling on mistreatment will never take us higher. It'll never make us more spiritual. When we call upon the name of the Lord, cast our cares upon him because he cares for us. And then we say, "Lord, you see. You see what they're doing." God will speak. He may say, "Okay, it's time to start looking for a new job." And even if that's the answer that he gives, you need to lay low so you don't get fired before you find that new job and try to have to answer why you got fired. There's a saying that's true, it's always easier to find a job when you got a job. And then there's another piece of it is you don't have to rush to take some equally worse job when you got a job. You'll have time to say no and wait and interview some more. So it doesn't mean that you have to stay and take it in our day because we have the ability to choose other jobs. But hey, here's Paul telling people who had no choice, you got to stay and you got to be quiet. And there was a great, deep, spiritual depth to that. That was being spoken to them.

Let me loop back to that word slave. It's truly one of the greatest mistranslations in that Bible that you hold, regardless of your translation. King James, for sure slavery was at a great highest contention in the history of man when the King James Bible was being written in the 1600s, and you have what I believe translators wanting to soften up the original word that was written there in the Greek. The word literally was slave. They changed it to the word bond servant, and it takes on that air and nature of what I described as a bond servant, but the word is truly slave. And here's the greatest point that I make, here's a listing of passages of scripture, as beautiful as that word bond servant is, I want to be bound to my Lord. Where else would I go? The word does literally mean slave, literally owned by a master.

And here's the reason above all reasons of why we honor our employer, our boss, our commander, because as slaves of Christ, our master says to do so. And that's all that needs to be said. Doesn't matter the treatment, doesn't matter the conditions. He said, "Honor them." And

if they're Christians too, don't expect special privileges above the other workers. You work hard because I tell you to, and Luke 17 tells of the requirement, whether it's the workplace or the ministry, the servant serves and he doesn't expect the accolades or great praises, because as the passage says, "You're doing simply, what's required of you to do."

Luke 17:7-10 (NKJV) ⁷ And which of you, having a servant plowing or tending sheep, will say to him when he has come in from the field, 'Come at once and sit down to eat'? ⁸ But will he not rather say to him, 'Prepare something for my supper, and gird yourself and serve me till I have eaten and drunk, and afterward you will eat and drink'? ⁹ Does he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? I think not. ¹⁰ So likewise you, when you have done all those things which you are commanded, say, 'We are unprofitable servants. We have done what was our duty to do.' "

We've been told we've been bought with a price. Our life's not our own. It's easy to love when we're loved. And there's a place where God says, "This is my witness." You're not going to use words. You're not going to preach a sermon. And many times we say, "How can I be a witness at work?" And here he says, "By not being like everyone else and complain, and talk down about the boss."

1 Corinthians 6:20 (NKJV) ²⁰ For you were bought at a price; therefore glorify God in your body and in your spirit, which are God's.

And then this all ultimately loops back around when it comes to the church and respect for the elders and the leaders and pastors. And he comes back into the home wives respecting their husbands, children honoring their parents, because it's our duty. Even if there was no reason, the reason enough is because we're slaves to the one who bought us and he's worthy.

Remember

Remember the last study... victim or victorious? In every resistance, whether the enemy infused or God divine working... there is a great opportunity in it.

Close

The title of the message is "Giving Honor".

The outline (1 Timothy 5:17 – 6:2):

- Giving Honor to the Church Leaders (5:17-25)
- Giving Honor to the Work Managers (6:1-2)

Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Passage: 1 Timothy 6:3-10

Title: Great Gain (The World's versus The Lord's)

The Theme of the epistle:

1 Timothy 3:14–16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

1 Timothy 6:3–12 (NKJV) ³ If anyone teaches otherwise and does not consent to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which accords with godliness, ⁴ he is proud, knowing nothing, but is obsessed with disputes and arguments over words, from which come envy, strife, reviling, evil suspicions, ⁵ useless wranglings of men of corrupt minds and destitute of the truth, who suppose that godliness is a means of gain. From such withdraw yourself. ⁶ Now godliness with contentment is great gain. ⁷ For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. ⁸ And having food and clothing, with these we shall be content. ⁹ But those who desire to be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and harmful lusts which drown men in destruction and perdition. ¹⁰ For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their greediness, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. ¹¹ But you, O man of God, flee these things and pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, gentleness. ¹² Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, to which you were also called and have confessed the good confession in the presence of many witnesses.

Contentment (with – content), sounds so simple, yet why is it so hard to possess? The key word is possess, it is not what we have, but who has us. Our key verse (v6), says godliness with contentment is great gain; whether it is material, positional, relational, or the likes, God will speak in our passage today to remind us and instruct us, it is not what we have, but who has us (and all that we possess in Him).

Godliness with contentment is great gain because we brought absolutely nothing into this world when we were born, and it is certain we can carry absolutely nothing out when we die. This proverbial statement was not new with Paul. God inspired both Job and Solomon to speak and write the same truth. Paul was saying that material possessions are of fleeting, secondary importance. They are not part of the true self which will abide. The words “carry nothing out” refers to a person’s “exit” from this life. Possessions are external, contentment is internal. Money is material, godliness is spiritual. Godliness and contentment will go with us when we depart. All the other things will be left behind.

Job 1:21 And he said: “Naked I came from my mother’s womb, And naked shall I return there. The LORD gave, and the LORD has taken away; Blessed be the name of the LORD.”

Job 1:21 (NKJV) ²¹ And he said: “Naked I came from my mother’s womb, And naked shall I return there. The LORD gave, and the LORD has taken away; Blessed be the name of the LORD.”

Ecclesiastes 5:15 (NKJV) ¹⁵ As he came from his mother’s womb, naked shall he return, To go as he came; And he shall take nothing from his labor Which he may carry away in his hand.

Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

(1 Timothy 6:3 NKJV) If anyone teaches otherwise and does not consent to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which accords with godliness,

Expounding on the subject, the apostle reminded believers of the gold standard and exposed forgers whose teachings do not meet that standard.

The touchstone of all teaching is “the words of our Lord Jesus Christ.” We are to compare all teaching to “the doctrine which is according to godliness” because the Lord’s teaching promoted godliness—that is, a proper attitude toward God. Paul’s ethical, moral, and practical teaching measured up to the gold standard of the Sermon on the Mount. His prophetic teaching was in harmony with the Lord’s parables and prophecies.

What is godliness? I summarize it two ways, “God-Likeness” (resemblances of God), and “Likes of God” (doing the things that “God Likes”).

(1 Timothy 6:4 NKJV) he is proud, knowing nothing, but is obsessed with disputes and arguments over words, from which come envy, strife, reviling, evil suspicions, (1 Timothy 6:5 NKJV) useless wranglings of men of corrupt minds and destitute of the truth, who suppose that godliness is a means of gain. From such withdraw yourself.

As might be expected, false teachers have financial motives. “Supposing that gain is godliness,” they act as they do to obtain money from their followers. They hope to make a profit from the Christian faith. Teaching false doctrine is just another profession to them, one that they hope will be lucrative. To Paul, such a motive was the last straw. It was bad enough that the false teachers of his day were propagating dangerous errors and teaching what they knew to be lies. What capped it all was that they were doing so to make money.

(1 Timothy 6:6 NKJV) Now godliness with contentment is great gain.

“Godliness with contentment is great gain.” The world cannot give it, nor can it take it away. Moreover, it is not for sale. The word translated “contentment” in 1 Timothy 6:6 is *autarkeia*, which means literally “satisfaction with what one has.” Such satisfaction takes the hassles out of life. Godly contentment lifts a person out of the realm of the physical, material, and temporal and into the realm of the spiritual and eternal. People who have learned to be content resemble majestic mountain peaks; clouds and storms might swirl around their feet, but their eyes gaze on a realm where the sun always shines and storms cannot reach.

Paul knew contentment

Philippians 4:10–13 (NKJV) ¹⁰ But I rejoiced in the Lord greatly that now at last your care for me has flourished again; though you surely did care, but you lacked opportunity. ¹¹ Not that I speak in regard to need, for I have learned in whatever state I am, to be content: ¹² I know how to be abased, and I know how to abound. Everywhere and in all things I have learned both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need. ¹³ I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me.

Philippians 4:18–20 (NKJV) ¹⁸ Indeed I have all and abound. I am full, having received from Epaphroditus the things sent from you, a sweet-smelling aroma, an acceptable sacrifice, well pleasing to God. ¹⁹ And my God shall supply all your need according to His riches in glory by Christ Jesus. ²⁰ Now to our God and Father be glory forever and ever. Amen.

God will not Withhold from You

(Psalms 84:11 NKJV) For the LORD God is a sun and shield; The LORD will give grace and glory; No good thing will He withhold From those who walk uprightly.

Be content on what God gives you. If you don’t have what you want, then assume that God doesn’t consider it good for you at this time. You are free to just enjoy the fact that all you have to do is work hard, and God will take care of it for you.

Quaker next Door

I read a story of a new family moving in next door to a Quaker. The Quaker watched him move in with all of his stuff, all his furnishings and expensive toys that “successful people” collect. The Quaker finally went over and said neighbor, if you ever need anything come see me, and I will tell you how to get along without it.

God will not withhold anything from you. Trust Him and be content.

(1 Timothy 6:7 NKJV) For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out.

Bill Gates and You

Do you realize that if you and Bill Gates were to die on the same day, you both would leave the same amount - everything

(1 Timothy 6:8 NKJV) And having food and clothing, with these we shall be content.

Top 3%

The poorest person here today is in the top 3% in the world in wealth. Top 3% yet we complain that we don't have enough. Do you know that an American dog eats better than 40% of the humans in this world. Yet we are not content. We can go to the refrigerator/cupboard, push and slid everything around to see all that is in there, and then say it is empty. Open our closet and say we have nothing to wear. We move into bigger houses to store all of our stuff. Yet we are not content.

(1 Timothy 6:9 NKJV) But those who desire to be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and harmful lusts which drown men in destruction and perdition.

(1 Timothy 6:10 NKJV) For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their greediness, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

It is the love of money that is the root of all evil, not money itself.

Money Will Lead you into Foolish Places

Wanting money can lead you into some foolish places. If you didn't have the money you wouldn't be drawn into those foolish lusts. You literally buy your way into places you never would have gone, and now you are sidetracked. Drugs, alcohol, gambling, movies (got to watch something at the movies, even if it isn't good for me, cause its Friday night at the movies). Maybe it's a little tuck here, a little puck there, and then your whole world changes, but not for the better.

Subtle Seduction – 1 more raise

It is the ever so subtle seduction of Satan. If I can just make one more pay grade, one more project, one more promotion, then I'll be set, but then it always seems to be just one more....

I'm not saying that 60, 80 hours of work is sin, for sometimes it is a necessity in order to stay employed and meet the deadline. Again there are times when we have to suck it up for the employer and our boss. But be careful if it just becomes a way of life.

Some of you have had to make some hard decisions in this area, taking a new job, pay cut, in order to have a life with your family, God will honor you for that.

Acts 8:1 (NKJV)

¹ Now Saul was consenting to his death. At that time a great persecution arose against the church which was at Jerusalem; and they were all scattered throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria, except the apostles.

In Acts chapter 8 we start with that Saul who will one day meet Jesus on the road to Damascus and have his name changed to Paul, but before that he is wreaking havoc on the church. He is making widows and he's making orphans and let it just be known that a living, breathing vibrant reproducing church will suffer persecution. And the word of God says, "All those who desire to live godly in Christ will suffer persecution." Don't believe the American gospel that we are to be comfortable and prosperous. That is our destiny. A living, breathing vibrant reproducing church should expect to suffer some type of persecution because of their witness for Christ.

2 Timothy 3:12–13 (NKJV) ¹² Yes, and all who desire to live godly in Christ Jesus will suffer persecution. ¹³ But evil men and impostors will grow worse and worse, deceiving and being deceived.

Acts 8:2 (NKJV)

² And devout men carried Stephen *to his burial*, and made great lamentation over him.

Verse 2. It says that devout men came to the body of Stephen. Devout men, devout women, devoted to Christ, devoted to family first, they come for their own. They take care of their own and they come for their own regardless of the risk. And regardless of their reputation, they come for their own as they come to take Stephen's body from these men who have just stoned it and destroyed it. And when they come, they would be putting themselves in harm's way, opening themselves up to the exact same possibly attack because now they've been associated with Stephen, but they come regardless of the cost, regardless of the risk, regardless of their reputation. And let it be said, family must fight for family. Amen.

Mark 6:29 (NKJV) ²⁹ When his disciples heard of it, they came and took away his corpse and laid it in a tomb.

John 19:38 (NKJV) ³⁸ After this, Joseph of Arimathea, being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly, for fear of the Jews, asked Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus; and Pilate gave him permission. So he came and took the body of Jesus.

Acts 8:3 (NKJV)

³ As for Saul, he made havoc of the church, entering every house, and dragging off men and women, committing *them* to prison.

Verse three, again, they're being dragged out of their houses, some were scattered, and now they're being hunted down and dragged out of their houses. And again, so much for the American gospel of health, wealth, and prosperity. Jesus will make your life brighter and your teeth whiter. This is the true gospel that we see turn the world upside down. That's the only gospel able to turn the world upside down. But this passage before us here, it's a power verse because what you read here is they did not recant, but they did not waver. And there's plenty of Christians around the world today who are living out this Acts chapter 8 verse three today, many of them in Afghanistan, they're not recounting their testimony for Christ and their commitment, and they're not wavering. They won't take whatever the consequences are. They deserve our prayers as Hebrews 10 tells us to remember those who are in chain, but it's a power verse for us as we look at this, the power in the testimony. They would not recant and they would not waver. It's literally the answer that we spoke of two weeks ago. I am a Christian. That is their whole being, and that is their whole existence and everything else is just part of their lives. I'm reminded of Matthew chapter 10, verse 32-33, who Jesus will confess and who Jesus will deny.

Acts 17:6 (NKJV) ⁶ But when they did not find them, they dragged Jason and some brethren to the rulers of the city, crying out, "These who have turned the world upside down have come here too."

Hebrews 13:3 (NKJV) ³ Remember the prisoners as if chained with them—those who are mistreated—since you yourselves are in the body also.

Matthew 10:32–33 (NKJV) ³² "Therefore whoever confesses Me before men, him I will also confess before My Father who is in heaven. ³³ But whoever denies Me before men, him I will also deny before My Father who is in heaven."

Acts 8:4–8 (NKJV)

⁴ Therefore those who were scattered went everywhere preaching the word. ⁵ Then Philip went down to the city of Samaria and preached Christ to them. ⁶ And the multitudes with one accord heeded the things spoken by Philip, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did. ⁷ For unclean

spirits, crying with a loud voice, came out of many who were possessed; and many who were paralyzed and lame were healed. ⁸ And there was great joy in that city.

Verses four through eight. As we read, Stephen was full of faith, wisdom, in the Spirit. Well, now we move on to Philip. He's the same full of faith, wisdom, and Spirit. And as we had said, and let it be noted again, God doesn't send the leftovers to the widows, the orphans and the outcast, but he sends his very best. And these men were such full of faith, full of wisdom and full of the Spirit. *Acts 6:2-6 (NKJV)* ² Then the twelve summoned the multitude of the disciples and said, "It is not desirable that we should leave the word of God and serve tables. ³ Therefore, brethren, seek out from among you seven men of good reputation, full of the Holy Spirit and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business; ⁴ but we will give ourselves continually to prayer and to the ministry of the word." ⁵ And the saying pleased the whole multitude. And they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and the Holy Spirit, and Philip, Prochorus, Nicanor, Timon, Parmenas, and Nicolas, a proselyte from Antioch, ⁶ whom they set before the apostles; and when they had prayed, they laid hands on them.

These men were willing to do the so-called menial tasks, the below task, the things such as wait on tables, clear tables, clean tables, wipe down tables, do the dishes. They are the epitome of you've been faithful in the little things, I'll make you ruler over many. And so here they are rising in power. They're recorded in the scriptures and they're held up as God's trophy of what he can do with those who are humble. Those who are just simply willing. Those who will say what Isaiah would say, here I am, Lord send me. Doesn't matter what it is that you want me to do, I'll do it, because anything that I do for God is for the glory of God, whether it's preaching a sermon, wiping a table, cleaning the toilet, witnessing across the sea. Whenever you ask me that I shall do. And we see the scripture humble myself in the sight of the Lord and he shall lift you up. Oh, the beauty in humility. And it's part of the theme of this passage that we're reading here in Acts chapter 8. And in 1 Timothy chapter 6. Let's read on.

Isaiah 6:8 (NKJV) ⁸ Also I heard the voice of the Lord, saying: "Whom shall I send, And who will go for Us?" Then I said, "Here am I! Send me."

James 4:10 (NKJV) ¹⁰ Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and He will lift you up.

But I love the picture that's given to us here with the waiting of tables that we read in Acts chapter 6. I believe it's just kind of the picture of what God calls all of us to do in some form or manner. We're preparing a banquet for others to partake in, to be nourished, to be supplied. And then it's a picture of ministry. We clean up. Sometimes we're cleaning up messes and sometimes we're cleaning up tremendous mountains of dishes and table scraps. But again, as we do it for the Lord, doing it to the least of these. And we're doing it as, as the scripture would say that each man seek not his own, but to the others' wellbeing.

1 Corinthians 10:24 (NKJV) ²⁴ Let no one seek his own, but each one the other's well-being.

Verse seven, look at the power of a waiter, of a table server, of a warehouse worker, of a closet organizer, a dish cleaner. Stephen preaches in power, Philip cast out demons, and the paralyzed walk. That's what God can do with a humble waiter, a humble servant, someone who's willing to simply say, here I am, Lord send me. And I am reminded just what Jesus said, "Greater works will you do than I, because I go to the Father," and I believe these great works are before all of us that we can change alive with the word of God and the love of Christ, that we can take people who are paralyzed in fear and anxiety and depression and set them free. And yes, I believe the gifts are still available today and that God may give gifts of healing for his glory today.

John 14:12-14 (NKJV) ¹² "Most assuredly, I say to you, he who believes in Me, the works that I do he will do also; and greater works than these he will do, because I go to My Father. ¹³ And whatever you ask in My name, that I will do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. ¹⁴ If you ask anything in My name, I will do it.

Acts 8:9-11 (NKJV)

⁹ But there was a certain man called Simon, who previously practiced sorcery in the city and astonished the people of Samaria, claiming that he was someone great, ¹⁰ to whom they all gave heed, from the least to the greatest, saying, "This man is the great power of God." ¹¹ And they heeded him because he had astonished them with his sorceries for a long time.

Verse 11, we come to this part of the story of Simon the sorcerer that fits so well with our passage here in 1 Timothy chapter 6. And again, we see the simple, humble humility of Philip and

Stephen willing to do whatever the Lord would call behind the scenes, not in the glory and the limelight and the spotlight. But here we see a man Simon the sorcerer whose past catches up to him because he didn't crush it, who wants the spotlight, who wants the power, and who wants the glory and won't just be settled and content and be humble with what the Lord has for him. I think there's a place for each and every one of us to look in at his life and analyze ours. Say, could this be me in any way? If so, have a way today, Lord.

It's hard for some people that come out of the world where they were power players, where they were, or are, influencers in their workplace, on their ball field, in their campus, whatever it may be. And then they meet Christ. They come to Christ and then they find themselves equal or even below in the reverence from a spiritual aspect and a use aspect of somebody who, if you would, they're just a waiter like Philip. They have a hard time with that because they're used to the power and influence that they have in their place in the world today.

But the power in the world, titles, money, influence, positions, records, and the like, that's the world's power, but here's the simple power in the Church and the men and women that God uses, full of wisdom, full of faith, full of the spirit.

And those only come through the process of what we read Philippians 1:6 that "He who began a good work will be faithful to complete it." It comes with Romans chapter 12:1-2 of a man and a woman laying themselves on the altar and allowing God to do the work and the transforming from the old man, woman into the new man or woman.

Philippians 1:6 (NKJV)⁶ being confident of this very thing, that He who has begun a good work in you will complete it until the day of Jesus Christ;

This takes us back to chapter five, where we were told, "Do not lay hands on someone quickly, only after it's been confirmed of what God has done." So we see this all tie together with this great example before us today.

1 Timothy 5:22 (NKJV)²² Do not lay hands on anyone hastily, nor share in other people's sins; keep yourself pure.

Acts 8:12–13 (NKJV)

¹² But when they believed Philip as he preached the things concerning the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, both men and women were baptized. ¹³ Then Simon himself also believed; and when he was baptized he continued with Philip, and was amazed, seeing the miracles and signs which were done.

Verse 12. Christian don't change your tactics, stick to the simple gospel. And you may feel that it's too simple. You may feel that it's not reachable to that person, but don't allow yourself to be drawn in, to change the simplicity of the gospel and the truth of the gospel. And don't be baited in to changing your approach to try to reach somebody that you think you need something more dynamic in the way you deliver it or more creative or more appealing. Do what we see here in this passage, the simple preaching of the gospel and lives responded and lives were changed.

Lots of churches today want to change the simplicity of the gospel. They want to make it light shows and coffee bars and thinking that's what will draw people in. And then eventually they'll be drawn to the gospel and it's not true. Light shows and coffee bars will not change a heart. The gospel in and of itself has the power. Exactly as Jesus said it would, to set a man free because the truth will set them free.

And here we see Philip simply speak, Jesus Christ, him crucified, nothing more, nothing less. Beloved, don't change your tactics on the gospel. Don't make it more friendly. Don't try to make it more appealing. Don't try to fall for the lie of making it relevant, but stay on the gospel of Jesus Christ.

What is the gospel?

- It's personal. God sees you, and he has a plan for your life. He created you for a purpose of fellowship with him, but there's a problem.
- And the problem is that all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, our sin breaking God's holy law, separates us from a holy God.
- And there's a penalty that comes with the breaking of God's law, just like, there is a breaking man's law, of stealing, of killing, and whatever it may be. There's a penalty that comes with it and we're told in Roman 6, "The wages of sin is death," but that verse goes on to tell us, "but the gift of God is eternal life."
- And that's the provision. The gift that you can't earn it, you can't buy it. You can't beg for it. The gift is simply given by God, John 3:16, the provision. "For God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten son that whoever should believe in him shall not perish, but have everlasting life." That's the provision and the gift that was given, God's only begotten son who traded places with you, traded places with me, for who anyone would receive the trade, he took our sin and the wrath and the penalty to come with it. The wages of sin, death, eternal separation from God, a place called hell, took it and buried it in the grave and then rose again on the third day. And that is the power of the gospel that death no longer can hold us and sin no longer overpowers us and a man, a woman can be truly set free.
- And what was a man and woman's role in it? It's the profession, which is to recognize repent, and receive.
- Recognize our sin separates us from the holy God. It's no one's fault, but our own it's our own choice and our own free will we chose to sin.
- Repent means to turn away and follow no more excuses, but to turn and say, "I'm going to walk after you. Your word, your way, a relationship walks together."
- And then you receive, and how do you receive? You simply ask Jesus Christ God himself to come into your life to forgive your sin. Romans 10:9 says, "If we confess our sins, he's faithful and just to forgive us, our sins and cleanse us from all unrighteousness." That is the gospel and anyone that wants to be set free can be set free and there's no need to make it appealing, try to make it relevant because the person who truly wants to be free from their sin and have a personal relationship with God, that's all they need to do right there, so stick to the simplicity of the power that comes with the gospel. Just like Philip did. Lives were changed.

Jeremiah 29:11 (NKJV) ¹¹ For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, says the LORD, thoughts of peace and not of evil, to give you a future and a hope.

Romans 3:23 (NKJV) ²³ for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God,

Romans 6:23 (NKJV) ²³ For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.

John 3:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.

Romans 10:9–13 (NKJV) ⁹ that if you confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus and believe in your heart that God has raised Him from the dead, you will be saved. ¹⁰ For with the heart one believes unto righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. ¹¹ For the Scripture says, "Whoever believes on Him will not be put to shame." ¹² For there is no distinction between Jew and Greek, for the same Lord over all is rich to all who call upon Him. ¹³ For "whoever calls on the name of the LORD shall be saved."

Acts 3:19–20 (NKJV) ¹⁹ Repent therefore and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, so that times of refreshing may come from the presence of the Lord, ²⁰ and that He may send Jesus Christ, who was preached to you before,

Those with the desire to be the ministers of God, wait on tables, or preach to the singular, the multitudes. Don't change the Gospel. Don't change the tactic. But you may need to change you. The men, women that God uses, full of wisdom, full of faith, and full of the spirit. There's a place for us to say, "Lord, give me your wisdom. Not the wisdom of the world, but your wisdom, on how, where to be used by you. Give me the faith to believe that your word will set the captives free. Give me faith to see things not yet but things that shall be when the word of God goes forth and reaches and changes a heart and a life. And Lord, baptize me, supply me with the holy spirit."

Zachariah 4:6, and Acts 1 and 2, the power of the spirit in our lives, that it's not about us and it's not our work. But the spirit will do the work in us and through us.

Zechariah 4:6 (NKJV) ⁶ So he answered and said to me: "This is the word of the LORD to Zerubbabel: 'Not by might nor by power, but by My Spirit,' Says the LORD of hosts.

Acts 1:8 (NKJV) ⁸ But you shall receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you; and you shall be witnesses to Me in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the end of the earth."

It's just an inquiring thought, and I wonder, and it will be nice to have conversations with Philip and Steven. But it'll be, "Well, when did you guys join the church, if you would? When did you guys give your life to Christ? Were you original followers of Christ, just not one of the apostles that we read about? Or were you one of the 500 witnesses who saw him after the resurrection? Or did someone share Christ with you, you heard the preaching of Peter or the apostles, and you turned and followed? Or was it before that? Were you there in the upper room, and you received the gift of the holy spirit when it was poured out on the day of Pentecost? Or were you possibly one of the recipients of the gifts of the holy spirit on that day that Peter got up and preached that sermon and 3000 were saved?" I wonder. It's quite interesting to ponder. But what I do know is, in some way through some where, these men were touched by God, changed by God, became men full of faith, full of wisdom, and full of the spirit.

1 Corinthians 15:3-8 (NKJV) ³ For I delivered to you first of all that which I also received: that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures, ⁴ and that He was buried, and that He rose again the third day according to the Scriptures, ⁵ and that He was seen by Cephas, then by the twelve. ⁶ After that He was seen by over five hundred brethren at once, of whom the greater part remain to the present, but some have fallen asleep. ⁷ After that He was seen by James, then by all the apostles. ⁸ Then last of all He was seen by me also, as by one born out of due time.

Acts 2:40-42 (NKJV) ⁴⁰ And with many other words he testified and exhorted them, saying, "Be saved from this perverse generation." ⁴¹ Then those who gladly received his word were baptized; and that day about three thousand souls were added to them. ⁴² And they continued steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, in the breaking of bread, and in prayers.

Verse 13 it says they believed. What this was to mean is they believed on the salvation, the Gospel of Jesus Christ, that we just discussed. Then they were baptized and this would be a water baptism, we can see, as we read on. It wasn't a baptism of the holy spirit.

Acts 8:14-17 (NKJV)

¹⁴ Now when the apostles who were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent Peter and John to them, ¹⁵ who, when they had come down, prayed for them that they might receive the Holy Spirit. ¹⁶ For as yet He had fallen upon none of them. They had only been baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. ¹⁷ Then they laid hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit.

Verse 16. Here they are being filled with the holy spirit. And what we see, just a simple confirmation that there's subsequent baptisms supply the holy spirit. Some happen at salvation and is coupled with the baptism of the holy spirit. And some comes at latter times for the empowerment of the holy spirit. He is the dynamic God, and he'll do what he chooses to do when you receive Christ as your lord and savior. Ephesians 1 says he puts his down payment in you and that's his holy spirit, to sign and seal you. It's the wedding ring that you're his. But then the baptism of the holy spirit for the works and service of God comes later, or at the same time. Whatever God chooses.

Ephesians 1:13-14 (NKJV) ¹³ In Him you also trusted, after you heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation; in whom also, having believed, you were sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise, ¹⁴ who is the guarantee of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, to the praise of His glory.

Acts 8:18–19 (NKJV)

¹⁸ And when Simon saw that through the laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Spirit was given, he offered them money, ¹⁹ saying, "Give me this power also, that anyone on whom I lay hands may receive the Holy Spirit."

Verse 19, still today, magicians buy tricks. Magicians will trade tricks. And that's what I believe Simon is looking to do as a sorcerer. He's more of a magician. The things he did, he did through magicry, not demon possession. But maybe he did. I don't truly know. But, in any case, he hears the word, believes. But then, when he sees this work and the coming down of the holy spirit upon people through the lane of hands, he does what he did in the world, reverts back to it and says, "Hey. That's an awesome trick. Let me buy it from you so that I can do the same trick." Peter's going to rebuke him, but there's an application here for the church. Many of the churches, they want to apply the tricks of the world to pack churches and to fill seats. But none of them will fill souls with the holy spirit and regeneration. Only the pure simplicity of the Gospel of Jesus Christ will do that.

Acts 8:20–23 (NKJV)

²⁰ But Peter said to him, "Your money perish with you, because you thought that the gift of God could be purchased with money! ²¹ You have neither part nor portion in this matter, for your heart is not right in the sight of God. ²² Repent therefore of this your wickedness, and pray God if perhaps the thought of your heart may be forgiven you. ²³ For I see that you are poisoned by bitterness and bound by iniquity."

Peter is given the gift of discernment to see truly what the heart and the issue here is with Simon the sorcerer, which is interesting. It's not recorded that he spent minutes, hours, days with Simon and could see him, from conversations, what was in his heart. It was just a moment that this happens, it appears, and Peter's given a discernment of what's truly the heart of Simon the sorcerer. It was that he was poisoned by bitterness and bound by iniquity. "Bitterness," Hebrews Chapter 12:15, "it will root and take root and it will choke out all life in a person."

The bitterness of Simon the sorcerer is that he's no longer the spotlight, that he doesn't have the people singing his praise and giving his accolades. And here we start tying this together with our study here in First Timothy Chapter 6, about these false teachers coming, looking to do it for godly gain, to make money and the likes. What happens when they don't get the title, the respect, the position, or whatever it may be. Bitterness takes root. And then it says, "Bound in iniquity." What's Simon's iniquity? It's these things we discussed. Pride, greed, power, and the likes. Those were sins that were choking him out.

Acts 8:24 (NKJV)

²⁴ Then Simon answered and said, "Pray to the Lord for me, that none of the things which you have spoken may come upon me."

Verse 24. The blindness of pride, greed, and power. We don't even recognize it and see it, but the not being content goes so much deeper, that it will choke you out and it will produce a poison in you, this greed of money or the greed for a title, the greed for power. I think all of us need to be on guard about this. If you notice, here Simon the sorcerer, he's not praying that his heart would be changed. He's not asking for a heart change. He's just asking, "Pray for me so the consequences don't fall upon me." He's more about worried of the consequences than he is about his character and his relationship with Christ.

Acts 8:25–29 (NKJV)

²⁵ So when they had testified and preached the word of the Lord, they returned to Jerusalem, preaching the gospel in many villages of the Samaritans. ²⁶ Now an angel of the Lord spoke to Philip, saying, "Arise and go toward the south along the road which goes down from Jerusalem to Gaza." This is desert. ²⁷ So he arose and went. And behold, a man of Ethiopia, a eunuch of great authority under Candace the queen of the Ethiopians, who had charge of all her treasury, and

had come to Jerusalem to worship, ²⁸ was returning. And sitting in his chariot, he was reading Isaiah the prophet. ²⁹ Then the Spirit said to Philip, "Go near and overtake this chariot."

Verse 26. Phillip moves on after a bad day of ministry. I would say that contentious confrontation would not be pleasant for anyone, for Peter, or Phillip, or Simon the sorcerer, or anyone that had to sit around while church discipline was being enacted. And it looks like it was public. There's a place that we go back to that the calling of church discipline, sometimes it needs to be public. In any case, more so, it was a bad day of ministry for Phillip. Yet he moves on, and he continues on with what would the Lord have made to do next? And I say that for everyone in the ministry. You know what? There's just going to be bad days of ministry. There's just going to be days where you poured yourself out, you gave yourself to, and things were going well and looking beautiful and moving greatly. And then all of suddenly, somebody steps in in the flesh and somebody has to be dealt with, or there's a contention from outside, as we said.

All those who desire to live godly in Christ Jesus will suffer persecution. It's easy to say, "That's it. I'm done. I don't feel like doing this." But look at Phillip. He just gets on and he moves on to what God has. And you're going to have bad days of ministry. It's just a fact. But Phillip gives the example. "We just get up and we move on, to say, 'What do you have for us next, Lord?'" He moves on. He continues on. And the next thing we know, there's a whole new opportunity that arises before him to reach a whole new person and people. That's always waiting around the door for us when we simply say, "Here I am, Lord. Send me."

Acts 8:30 (NKJV)

³⁰ So Philip ran to him, and heard him reading the prophet Isaiah, and said, "Do you understand what you are reading?"

Verse 30. Notice it says, "And he ran to the man after God pointed and spoke and said what he desires for him to do." Can I say that to each and every one of us, myself included? When God speaks and says, "Do it. Run to it." We are so apt to sit and analyze it. So apt to sit and question it. So apt to sit and ponder it. And we miss the moment. Had Philip not run he could have been outrun by the chariot and missed the opportunity. He had to run to get to the chariot to stop and make his ministry that God had before him. And there's just the power. What has God asked you to do, run to it and go get it done.

The Contentment

So the contrasting of contentment we see in this chapter, starting off with Saul and Steven, and then into Phillip, Simon the Sorcerer, and Peter. The striving and the discontent, and the contentment of the godly with godliness.

What do we see the secret of the three (Peter, Stephen, and Phillip) – they were content, because they had been with Jesus:

Acts 4:13 (NKJV) ¹³ Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were uneducated and untrained men, they marveled. And they realized that they had been with Jesus.

I think for Peter especially, he walked with the master, and saw Jesus living out His godliness with contentment.

Remember the theme of this epistle?

1 Timothy 3:14–16 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These things I write to you, though I hope to come to you shortly; ¹⁵ but if I am delayed, I write so that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, Justified in the Spirit, Seen by angels, Preached among the Gentiles, Believed on in the world, Received up in glory.

Paul is telling Timothy in this letter I am going to instruct you on godliness. And now we can tie it all together here "in Jesus". The mystery (hidden truth) of godliness is who Jesus was, but as we study His life, we read and discover "how "Jesus" was.

God was manifested in the flesh, - speaks of His humanity, and Jesus was content with and in the limitations of being human and laid down His rights and power of being divine. Fully God, and fully human. Philippians 2:5-8, says let this mind be in you! And there is the pathway to our life of contentment in this earth and world.

Philippians 2:5–8 (NKJV) ⁵ Let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus, ⁶ who, being in the form of God, did not consider it robbery to be equal with God, ⁷ but made Himself of no reputation, taking the form of a bondservant, and coming in the likeness of men. ⁸ And being found in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself and became obedient to the point of death, even the death of the cross.

Justified in the Spirit, - laying down His right to have to do as He willed, but calling to the Father when in need of power to do the works of God.

Mark 6:40–41 (NKJV) ⁴⁰ So they sat down in ranks, in hundreds and in fifties. ⁴¹ And when He had taken the five loaves and the two fish, He looked up to heaven, blessed and broke the loaves, and gave them to His disciples to set before them; and the two fish He divided among them all.

Seen by angels, - as in His wilderness temptation, and as in the garden, Jesus allowed Himself to be served and ministered to by the angels, thus we see He didn't have it all, but waited and allowed Himself to be content with all the Father would supply Him.

Matthew 4:11 (NKJV) ¹¹ Then the devil left Him, and behold, angels came and ministered to Him.

Luke 22:42–43 (NKJV) ⁴² saying, "Father, if it is Your will, take this cup away from Me; nevertheless not My will, but Yours, be done." ⁴³ Then an angel appeared to Him from heaven, strengthening Him.

Preached among the Gentiles, - Jesus was content to preach and minister outside the preconceived, man-made boundaries, of who should be ministered to.

Matthew 4:24–25 (NKJV) ²⁴ Then His fame went throughout all Syria; and they brought to Him all sick people who were afflicted with various diseases and torments, and those who were demon-possessed, epileptics, and paralytics; and He healed them. ²⁵ Great multitudes followed Him—from Galilee, and from Decapolis, Jerusalem, Judea, and beyond the Jordan.

Believed on in the world, - Jesus was content, that not will see His glory, respect His glory, nor receive His mission (to save them from their sin). Yet Jesus went on content in doing the Father's business.

Luke 18:24–27 (NKJV) ²⁴ And when Jesus saw that he became very sorrowful, He said, "How hard it is for those who have riches to enter the kingdom of God! ²⁵ For it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God." ²⁶ And those who heard it said, "Who then can be saved?" ²⁷ But He said, "The things which are impossible with men are possible with God."

John 6:66–69 (NKJV) ⁶⁶ From that time many of His disciples went back and walked with Him no more. ⁶⁷ Then Jesus said to the twelve, "Do you also want to go away?" ⁶⁸ But Simon Peter answered Him, "Lord, to whom shall we go? You have the words of eternal life. ⁶⁹ Also we have come to believe and know that You are the Christ, the Son of the living God."

Received up in glory

Jesus was content to not receive His glory here on earth, but to wait for His heavenly glory. Satan in the wilderness temptation, (possible? again at the Garden prayer), offered Jesus the Kingdom, the power, and the glory... and Jesus refused it all. The glory of this earth not worthy to be compared to the glory to come.

Matthew 4:1–11 (NKJV) ¹ Then Jesus was led up by the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by the devil. ² And when He had fasted forty days and forty nights, afterward He was hungry. ³ Now when the tempter came to Him, he said, "If You are the Son of God, command that these stones become bread." ⁴ But He answered and said, "It is written, 'Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God.'" ⁵ Then the devil took Him up into the holy city, set Him on the pinnacle of the temple, ⁶ and said to Him, "If You are the Son of God, throw Yourself down. For it is written: 'He shall give His angels charge over you,' and, 'In their hands they shall bear you up, Lest you dash your foot against a stone.'" ⁷ Jesus said to him, "It is written again, 'You shall not tempt the LORD your God.'" ⁸ Again, the devil took Him up on an exceedingly high mountain, and showed Him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory. ⁹ And he said to Him, "All these things I will give You if You will fall down and worship me." ¹⁰ Then Jesus said to him, "Away with you, Satan! For it is written, 'You shall worship the LORD your God, and Him only you shall serve.'" ¹¹ Then the devil left Him, and behold, angels came and ministered to Him.

Matthew 25:21 (NKJV) ²¹ His lord said to him, 'Well done, good and faithful servant; you were faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many things. Enter into the joy of your lord.'

Romans 8:18 (NKJV) ¹⁸ For I consider that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.

(1 Timothy 6:11 NKJV) But you, O man of God, flee these things and pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, gentleness.

(1 Timothy 6:12 NKJV) Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, to which you were also called and have confessed the good confession in the presence of many witnesses.

Paul Give Timothy the Battle Cry

Then in verse 13 Paul gives Timothy a military order

*(1 Timothy 6:13 KJV) I give thee **charge** in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession;*

Paul is encouraging Timothy in the battle and warfare he is facing. How does he encourage him, by reminding how awesome his God is, and that someday all these material things will burn and all that we will stand before the Lord of All Creation.

Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Passage: 1 Timothy 6:11-21
Title: But You O Man of God

1 Timothy 6:11–21 (NKJV) ¹¹ But you, O man of God, flee these things and pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, gentleness. ¹² Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, to which you were also called and have confessed the good confession in the presence of many witnesses. ¹³ I urge you in the sight of God who gives life to all things, and before Christ Jesus who witnessed the good confession before Pontius Pilate, ¹⁴ that you keep this commandment without spot, blameless until our Lord Jesus Christ's appearing, ¹⁵ which He will manifest in His own time, He who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings and Lord of lords, ¹⁶ who alone has immortality, dwelling in unapproachable light, whom no man has seen or can see, to whom be honor and everlasting power. Amen. ¹⁷ Command those who are rich in this present age not to be haughty, nor to trust in uncertain riches but in the living God, who gives us richly all things to enjoy. ¹⁸ Let them do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to give, willing to share, ¹⁹ storing up for themselves a good foundation for the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life. ²⁰ O Timothy! Guard what was committed to your trust, avoiding the profane and idle babblings and contradictions of what is falsely called knowledge—²¹ by professing it some have strayed concerning the faith. Grace be with you. Amen.

Summary: Paul says to his young protégé Timothy in our passage today, “But you O man of God”. What an honor and what a calling for us, men and woman of God. Paul will say three things to Timothy regarding the calling: Flee, Pursue, and Fight. Join us as we look into these things, on how to gain them, keep them, and apply them in our lives as “a man/woman of God.”

And

We have the closing of the letter. Yes, and o’ my, what a volume of details for study (Potentate, Unapproachable Light, Fight, flee, pursue, blameless, righteousness, and on and on); but the reason they are woven and highly charged is because Paul is closing out this letter. Paul is giving Timothy a charge (command v.14), a military order is the word there, and it means to execute the mission with everything you have been taught and trained to do, and do it courageously and valiantly. Timothy, don’t quit, finish well. And, as Paul does he breaks out into what is called a doxology, “Blessed be the God and Father ...” (Heb. bārûk; Gk. eulogētós; Gen. 24:27; Ex. 18:10; 1 Ch. 16:36; Lk. 1:68; 2 Cor. 1:3f; Eph. 1:3; 1 Pet. 1:3; etc.), followed by a statement of the attributes motivating the utterance, primarily God’s activities in the lives of His people. As I like to say, Paul starts to talk about the glorious and awesome God, and just unhooks from his point he is making and breaks out into a place of praise that overtakes him and burst forth from him. Then after a few minutes of that he comes back to, “oh now where was I”. I don’t want to miss that today, I want to finish this book as Paul did, giving a commanding charge, and an unhooked doxology of praise to our mighty God. So for the most part you will not see our usually word-by-word, detailed interpretation, and doctrinal and theological exploration, but finishing just as the Paul did, just as I see, the Holy Spirit intended it to be..... A battle charge to go fight the fight, and a praise to who is worthy and so glorious, who called us out of darkness into His marvelous light, as it is who died for us, and we that live for Him.

Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.
Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

(1 Timothy 6:11 NKJV) But you, O man of God, flee these things and pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, gentleness.

Flee these things – is referring back to 6:1-10, most specifically pursuing riches, positions, and things

But you, O man of God – It is with great joy and honor for me to say to you today..... but you O man/women of God. Can I remind you of that, may you hear it be spoken by the Living God into your ears.... You man/women of God.

I'm not exactly sure how it looks like, surely not some light-hearted greeting, hello Timothy you man of God. But there is sure power, as we see it here, for someone to say in a context that serious, and say "Timothy, you are a man of God". Imagine Timothy (Timid-thy – who wants to leave Ephesus (1:3), probably feels unqualified, overburdened, and the likes) to hear from his mentor, the Great Apostle Paul say, "You Man Of God". Imagine the power-charge those words became to him at that immediately moment. We need to do the same for each other.... Reminding each other, we are men and women of God. I surely don't look at this church and feel we are some group that gets together from week-to-week, but I see men and woman of God, who are coming because we want to know Him more and be more like Him. Hey Christian, You man/woman of God, let's not forget that.... And let's finish well.

Let's finish well, and with that title and descriptions, there comes a high calling, and here we see the calling to pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, and gentleness.

Here is the thing, all these things (righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, and gentleness) are who He is, His very nature and attributes, therefore all these things are found "IN HIM", not a process or a program, but a Person, the very person who is personal and intimate with His creation. Therefor to pursue (righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, and gentleness) is to pursue Him. These things, I am not, you are not, but He is, thus we pursue Him!

Often, and maybe we are really missing the fullness of the offer, we are told ask and it will be given, seek and you will find, knock and it shall be open unto you; so true as the personal God is intimately involved in every detail of our lives. But imagine that prayer request, asking for Him? Lord I am asking, and I am seeking, and I am knocking, and my request is MORE of You. When I get Him, I get everything that comes with Him (righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, and gentleness).

Matthew 7:7 (NKJV) ⁷ "Ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be opened to you."

That is why we pursue Him.

Last study we looked at Philippians 2, let this mind be in you, and we saw it was the mind of Christ, the way God thinks. Well let me couple with that Proverbs 23, as a man thinks therefore he is. As we seek as we pursue "Him", we become more like Him.

Philippians 2:5-7 (NKJV) ⁵ Let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus, ⁶ who, being in the form of God, did not consider it robbery to be equal with God, ⁷ but made Himself of no reputation, taking the form of a bondservant, and coming in the likeness of men.

Proverbs 23:7 (NKJV) ⁷ For as he thinks in his heart, so is he. "Eat and drink!" he says to you, But his heart is not with you.

That makes it so much easier, I need to focus solely on Him, and not 100, or 12, or 3, but One, Him.

So, a man/woman of God, is who we are in Him, and that never changes, regardless how well we may be doing or not doing. And as I pursue after Him, more and more, I become like Him (godliness, God-likeness). Then suddenly, I see something I can be, because of Him, and not because of me.

Verse 11, we come to this word love. It's the word that we, I think studying the Bible and being a Christian for so long, we almost forget it, and what it means. This word agape in the Greek, it's a meaning for unconditional love. There's another word in the Greek for love that means friendship. And there's another word for love that's tied to the intimacy aspect of love. But this word here in verse 11 is the word of unconditional love. It's a word that God would speak to us, for God so loved the world. Agape, an unconditional love. The depths of his love, for those that are his. We have as believers an unconditional loving God who loves us unconditionally because it's all based and tied to his love that was signed, sealed, and delivered there upon the cross, and resurrected in power on the third day. That's the resurrection love of the agape unconditional love that he gives us. But you know, there's a place for us as we look at him, have I, have you, ever considered to say with words, God, I love you unconditionally? Regardless of what happens in my life, regardless of anything that doesn't go as I had hoped, if this is a place with our heart and the profession of our mouth, I love you unconditionally. No matter what, I love you. And I find when I say such words, I'm filled with ... over, because I trust you unconditionally. And I know that you love me unconditionally, and therefore I can rest and trust in that love in my life personally, in my present situation, practically. Unconditional love from an unconditional loving God puts me in a place that I can say the same back to you. I love you unconditionally, Lord, regardless of any conditions here on this Earth.

(1 Timothy 6:12 NKJV) Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, to which you were also called and have confessed the good confession in the presence of many witnesses.

Fight the good fight of faith – Christian, we are in a fight and let us never forget it.

Notice in verse 11 says flee, and in verse 12 it says to fight – those our two actions for the “man/woman of God”.

As I think of a fighter, I can't help but think of David, and the mighty men of David.

I'm called to be a valiant man. And there, again, in 1 Chronicles 11, as we look at the mighty men of God that fought for David, and the listing of them is kind of a theme for this passage today, we see man after man who is called a valiant man of God, a man, a woman of war and battle skilled. But for me to be a valiant man, I need a valiant God. As we look at these sons whose fathers were valiant men and they too became valiant men, me as a son of God, you as a woman, a daughter of God, we need a valiant father, and our God is valiant. We can take full confidence in that he will give us and pass to us the valiant fighting skills and heart that we need. We need only to call out to Him for them.

1 Chronicles 11:10–23 (NKJV) ¹⁰ Now these were the heads of the mighty men whom David had, who strengthened themselves with him in his kingdom, with all Israel, to make him king, according to the word of the LORD concerning Israel. ¹¹ And this is the number of the mighty men whom David had: Jashobeam the son of a Hachmonite, chief of the captains; he had lifted up his spear against three hundred, killed by him at one time. ¹² After him was Eleazar the son of Dodo, the Ahohite, who was one of the three mighty men. ¹³ He was with David at Pasdammim. Now there the Philistines were gathered for battle, and there was a piece of ground full of barley. So the people fled from the Philistines. ¹⁴ But they stationed themselves in the middle of that field, defended it, and killed the Philistines. So the LORD brought about a great victory. ¹⁵ Now three of the thirty chief men went down to the rock to David, into the cave of Adullam; and the army of the Philistines encamped in the Valley of Rephaim. ¹⁶ David was then in the stronghold, and the garrison of the Philistines was then in Bethlehem. ¹⁷ And David said with longing, “Oh, that someone would give me a drink of water from the well of Bethlehem, which is by the gate!” ¹⁸ So the three broke through the camp of the Philistines, drew water from the well of Bethlehem that was by the gate, and took it and brought it to David. Nevertheless David would not drink it, but poured it out to the LORD. ¹⁹ And he said, “Far be it from me, O my God, that I should do this! Shall I drink the blood of these men who have put their lives in jeopardy? For at the risk of their lives they brought it.” Therefore he would not drink it. These things were done by the three mighty men. ²⁰ Abishai the brother of Joab was chief of another three. He had lifted up his spear against three hundred men, killed them, and won a name among these three. ²¹ Of the three he was more honored than the other two men. Therefore he became their captain. However he did not attain to the first three. ²² Benaiah was the son of Jehoiada, the son of a valiant man from Kabzeel, who had done many deeds. He had killed two lion-like heroes of Moab. He also had gone down and killed a lion in the midst of a pit on a snowy day. ²³ And he killed an Egyptian, a man of great height, five cubits tall. In the Egyptian's hand there was a spear like a weaver's beam; and he went down to him with a staff, wrested the spear out of the Egyptian's hand, and killed him with his own spear.

Speaking of David's mighty men, I'm reminded of the mighty man who fought for the lentils, who fought for the barley. And there's a power in that message that conveys on to us speaking of the word of God, and that is a weapon in the hands of a malnourished Christian is powerless. We cannot and will not fight in power if we are malnourished in the word of God and in the spirit of God. Christians, we must be students of the word and be nourished in its power to be ready to fight for the day and whatever comes before us.

2 Timothy 2:15 (KJV 1900) ¹⁵ Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

So in war, in military activity and actions, an army doesn't just attack, it also defends (our spiritual application is to defend and fleeing a means of defending if need be). And in 1 Chronicles 11 we see a powerful example that's real and living. It was Joab as he was fighting for his king, King David, and they were fighting to take the city of Jerusalem and make it the capital and make it the center of the nation. We read that Joab climbed a shaft, a water shaft, and literally snuck into the city, which he would have then opened the gates and allowed the rest of the army in. And the ultimate outcome was the city was taken in a great and mighty way through a man named Joab who had boldness and was without fear. And as we've studied in times past, because he had a heart for his king and a heart for the king's kingdom, and he literally fought because he wanted to please the king, and that was King David.

1 Chronicles 11:6-8 (NKJV) ⁶ Now David said, "Whoever attacks the Jebusites first shall be chief and captain." And Joab the son of Zeruiah went up first, and became chief. ⁷ Then David dwelt in the stronghold; therefore they called it the City of David. ⁸ And he built the city around it, from the Millo to the surrounding area. Joab repaired the rest of the city.

But in 1 Chronicles 11, we read on that it was Joab who repaired the surrounding walls of Jerusalem, those walls that were existing. And the reason that he could repair the walls was that when he was looking for his way in to attack, he went through and evaluated every vulnerable spot, everywhere there was a weakness. And he analyzed it and determined what was the greatest vulnerability that he could attack for the surest success? And no doubt, he had several points and places of vulnerability. And in the end, he chose the shaft, and rightly so, as the most vulnerable spot that he could attack and overcome the enemy. But it is afterwards that we see he knew exactly the other spots because he had evaluated them. And then he went to repair them because he knew of their weakness, and that he repaired them so that an enemy that was coming could not try to exploit the weakness and the vulnerability. And so Joab strengthened that which was weak, reinforced that which could not stand and defend.

Paul tells Timothy to flee.....

1 Timothy 6:11 (NKJV) ¹¹ But you, O man of God, flee these things and pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, gentleness.

2 Timothy 2:22 (NKJV) ²² Flee also youthful lusts; but pursue righteousness, faith, love, peace with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

And Christian, there's just a powerful application here that is that in war, and we are in one, we don't just look for vulnerabilities, we reinforce vulnerabilities. We look and evaluate what is a weakness and where can we be penetrated and defeated and overcome, and then we have to spend time to reinforce those areas. We have to spend time to fortify those areas because if we see them, you can be sure that the enemy sees them as he studies us and looks, where is the greatest place I can attack? So my question for you, Christian, today, when was the last time you took a survey of what's weak in your life, what's open in your life, what is a place that you could find yourself defeated and overcome by the devil, the world or the flesh.

And, when you finish that evaluation, maybe you need to do that today, then you need to make a plan how you're going to fortify it.

- Maybe there's a vulnerability that's creeping into your marriage that the enemy's going to exploit. You need to do what Joab did, you go and repair the wall and fortify it.
- Dads, moms, you need to look at your children and where there's a weakness in the wall that the enemy can exploit. Maybe it is something social media. Maybe it's something in

digital entertainment. Maybe it's wrong friends. Maybe it's wrong places. Maybe it's you in the wrong place just not spending enough time with them. You need to fortify that wall. You need to strengthen it because if you can see it, the devil's already saw it and he will exploit it at some place. And you need to be a Joab and you need to go and repair that wall.

But how about personally? Are there places that you can see the walls weakening? Maybe some compromise here, a little allowing of that there? Eventually, that wall that needs repaired is going to bust and it's going to be a full openly that the enemy can flood in and take advantage and exploit that opportunity. We need to do some wall building today. We need to repair some walls. We need to fortify some walls. We need to strengthen some walls. We need to do it with figure and confidence, and we need to do it now.

As we said last week, when Philip saw the man in the chariot, the Ethiopian, the Lord spoke to him to come alongside the chariot. And we read there in Acts 8 that Philip ran to get to the chariot. He ran because if he would have waited and the analysis, point of continual analysis, as I say, the paralysis of analysis, he could have fully missed the chariot and it would have been too far down the road to catch up. He had to run to catch it where it was. If he had waited any longer, it had been too far to run. He could have never done it. And there's a place for us. We need to run to get some wall building material. And we need to run to start slapping some mortar and putting up some bricks because we are in a battle and there's a place we fight, and there's a place that we flee, and there's a place that we pursue. And then more, we attack as much as we defend. *Acts 8:29–30 (NKJV)* ²⁹ Then the Spirit said to Philip, "Go near and overtake this chariot." ³⁰ So Philip ran to him, and heard him reading the prophet Isaiah, and said, "Do you understand what you are reading?"

Verse 12, regarding the witness of our confession. There's pure power in it, Christian. And you know, there is no closet, Christians. There's a boldness that comes, that's poured out in our lives. As we have studied in the past in chapter three, the power of the witness and how we just live in bold faith. We studied last week in Matthew 10:32 that the Lord says, "If you confess me before men, I will confess you before my father in heaven." He goes on to say, "If you deny me before men, I will deny you before my father in heaven." But there is this pure power unleashing when we confess God before men, because it's an unleashing of faith, that we have enough faith that we step out boldly without the care of peer pressure, and without care of judgment and criticality. But we step out and in faith unleash, I am a Christian, and there's just pure power in that witness. *Matthew 10:32–33 (NKJV)* ³² "Therefore whoever confesses Me before men, him I will also confess before My Father who is in heaven." ³³ But whoever denies Me before men, him I will also deny before My Father who is in heaven.

(1 Timothy 6:13 NKJV) I urge you in the sight of God who gives life to all things, and before Christ Jesus who witnessed the good confession before Pontius Pilate,

Christ Jesus who witnessed the good confession before Pontius Pilate – Pilate would ask, are You the King of the Jews? To which Jesus would say, "it is as you say". Paul begins to build on, the King of Kings – the Almighty God. *Matthew 27:11–12 (NKJV)* ¹¹ Now Jesus stood before the governor. And the governor asked Him, saying, "Are You the King of the Jews?" Jesus said to him, "It is as you say." ¹² And while He was being accused by the chief priests and elders, He answered nothing.

(1 Timothy 6:14 NKJV) that you keep this commandment without spot, blameless until our Lord Jesus Christ's appearing,

Until our Lord Jesus Christ's appearing – we study prophecy and prophecy updates because they keep us in the continual reminder Jesus is Coming Soon (His Appearing) and therefore how then should we live based on His soon return. The answer....blameless till He comes.

**(1 Timothy 6:15 NKJV) which He will manifest in His own time, He who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings and Lord of lords,
(1 Timothy 6:16 NKJV) who alone has immortality, dwelling in unapproachable light, whom no man has seen or can see, to whom be honor and everlasting power. Amen.**

King of Kings – we won't see this title again until Revelation

Revelation 17:14 (NKJV) ¹⁴ These will make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb will overcome them, for He is Lord of lords and King of kings; and those who are with Him are called, chosen, and faithful."

Revelation 19:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ And He has on His robe and on His thigh a name written: KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS

Potentate – (Miriarn-Webster Dictionary) broadly : one who wields great power or sway. Also, powerful ruler. That is our God, but how do I apply this, His power, in my life personally, how do I get this power working for me in my life personally.

Let's head back to 1 Chronicles

1 Chronicles 16:1 (NKJV) ¹ So they brought the ark of God, and set it in the midst of the tabernacle that David had erected for it. Then they offered burnt offerings and peace offerings before God.

In First Chronicles 16, we read after David took the city, after Joab climbed the shaft, as they repaired the walls of the city, we read that David brought the Ark of God, the Ark of the Lord, and set it in the middle of the tabernacle that was built there in Jerusalem. The ark represented the presence of the Lord. David was bringing it into the center of Jerusalem. David was bringing it into the center of Israel. David was bringing the Ark of the Lord into Jerusalem, the center of the kingdom. And we know David would then be bringing it into the holy of Holies, the presence of the Lord in the center of Jerusalem. And we see a subtle, yet clear message for us, of God being in the center of our lives, the center of our very being. This is what we pursue. We pursue after a person, the person of Jesus Christ. We bring him into the center of our lives, personally, of our marriages, of our family, of our ministry, of our work, of our activities, of all that we are, he is the center of all of those things.

And you know, what is pure power as we look on and continue seeing this, what's in the center of Jerusalem, of the tabernacle, was the Ark of God, the ark that had three things in it,

1. the tablets of the commandments,
2. a jar preserved of the manna from heaven in the wilderness wandering,
3. and then thirdly, Aaron's rod that had budded to show that he was God's anointed and appointed priesthood.

And as we look at these things and we say, what is in the center of it all,

1. we see the tablets representing the word of God.
2. We see the jar of manna representing his great provision.
3. And we see Aaron's rod representing his godly leadership that he places in church and he places in the middle of homes to lead the homes.

And we see the two defenses that God gives here in First Timothy to protect his church, to protect the home. It's the word of God and pure doctrine of that word. And secondly, it's godly leadership. And most interesting along that line, too, is his great provision, manna from heaven, supplying the need as a reminder that that's what he does, and how that is such a picture from last week's study, and we'll see it here in a few verses, of the call to not seek after riches, and the deception of them, and the love of them, and the warning that they take a person away from what? God in the center of our lives. It's a distraction that takes us away from being with him in the center.

As soon as David put the Ark in the tabernacle, we read that he offered a burnt offering unto the Lord. And how fitting, as we look at the presence of God, and there's a sacrifice associated with that, there immediately ... takes me to Romans chapter 12, verse one and two, "I beseech you

therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God to present yourself a living sacrifice." And here we see God's presence coupled with our partnering. God won't, if we don't, but God will, if we do. We partner with his presence, and we do that as was seen in Romans chapter 12, by offering our lives, a living sacrifice, fully and wholly unto him, that unconditional love unto him as he gives unconditional love unto us. And we do this by saying "Here I am, Lord, send me, take me, have me." And this follows on last week study kind of talking about the Lord sends me, and this week we talk about the Lord, take me. What a beautiful imagery we have of this unconditional love for the Lord. Here I am, Lord. Take me, have me. Every last bit of me, I give to you. What a glorious life it is, oh, you man, woman of God.

Romans 12:1–2 (NKJV) ¹ I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. ² And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.

Christian, the Lord cannot take you any further than you are willing to go!

1 Chronicles 16:8–12 (NKJV) ⁸ Oh, give thanks to the LORD! Call upon His name; Make known His deeds among the peoples! ⁹ Sing to Him, sing psalms to Him; Talk of all His wondrous works! ¹⁰ Glory in His holy name; Let the hearts of those rejoice who seek the LORD! ¹¹ Seek the LORD and His strength; Seek His face evermore! ¹² Remember His marvelous works which He has done, His wonders, and the judgments of His mouth,

Here we are, another Doxology!

Verse 8 unlocks this more so. David gives thanks, and oh, the power of giving thanks. Because in the giving of thanks, we see in verse nine what thanks unlocks is the recognition, the realization, and the remembrance of God's wondrous works. And there is power in the memory. There is power in going back and remembering the wondrous works of God. It unleashes and unlocks that we know we have a valiant god who fights valiantly, who is our God. And we partner with him to be in living sacrifices in the midst of his presence in the center of our lives.

Psalms 77, verse 13 and 14, says, "Thy ways, oh God, are in the sanctuary," the sanctuary, the inner dwelling place of God. And First Corinthians 3:16 says, "Don't you know that you are the temple?" You can literally say sanctuary of God, the inner dwelling in us. Oh, thy ways, oh God are in the sanctuary. You are the God who does wonders. The wonders that he has done in the universe, and in creation, the wonders he has done in the nation of Israel, leading them from bondage of Egypt, through the wilderness, wandering into the promised land. All pictures, and promises, and demonstrations of the wondrous works that God will do in our lives personally. He's still the mighty wonder, miracle working, way making God who does this wondrous works as we partner with him in his presence, through our willing to be living sacrifices. Here I am, Lord, take all of me. As I love you and trust you unconditionally, I give you that same unconditional love as you give me. And that unconditional trust I give to you, that whatever you do will be wondrous works.

Psalms 77:13–14 (NKJV) ¹³ Your way, O God, is in the sanctuary; Who is so great a God as our God? ¹⁴ You are the God who does wonders; You have declared Your strength among the peoples.

1 Corinthians 3:16–17 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you? ¹⁷ If anyone defiles the temple of God, God will destroy him. For the temple of God is holy, which temple you are.

1 Chronicles 16:16–18 (NKJV) ¹⁶ The covenant which He made with Abraham, And His oath to Isaac, ¹⁷ And confirmed it to Jacob for a statute, To Israel for an everlasting covenant, ¹⁸ Saying, "To you I will give the land of Canaan As the allotment of your inheritance,"

The promise He made to Abraham, the lineages confirm and remind of His promises and that they cannot be stopped. You ever get bored with all the chapters when it's lineage, after lineage, after lineage? You know what God is saying? This will be part of the prophecy update as we talk of that next week, of the Lord soon appearing. What those lineages speak is that God testifies that no one can stop him, that no one can stop the Lord almighty, because when you read those

lineages and you come to today, and you see a nation that's still standing after 2000 years without a homeland, but there they are. And here they are birthed again into the land, and birthed again into their place. And when we read lineages, we read of a God who says, "No one can stop what I'm going to do, no matter how many try. Israel will still be standing. And they will be standing in the last days and on the last day, because I am the Lord almighty." Check out Isaiah 14:27. Who can stop the Lord almighty? No one can stop the Lord almighty. That's your valiant God who fights for you.

Philippians 1:6 (NKJV) ⁶ being confident of this very thing, that He who has begun a good work in you will complete it until the day of Jesus Christ;

Isaiah 14:27 (NKJV) ²⁷ For the LORD of hosts has purposed, And who will annul it? His hand is stretched out, And who will turn it back?"

Which by the way I know we apply that passage to mean salvation to being kept and being transformed (Romans 12:2), but you can claim that promise for that "thing" that you have been led by Him to start to do today. That commitment the two of you have made in your marriage, that ministry God has called you to start, that personal calling upon your life – you can claim that as a promise, that He who began that work with you will be faithful to complete it.

Philippians 1:6 (NKJV) ⁶ being confident of this very thing, that He who has begun a good work in you will complete it until the day of Jesus Christ;

1 Chronicles 16:23–29 (NKJV) ²³ Sing to the LORD, all the earth; Proclaim the good news of His salvation from day to day. ²⁴ Declare His glory among the nations, His wonders among all peoples. ²⁵ For the LORD *is* great and greatly to be praised; He *is* also to be feared above all gods. ²⁶ For all the gods of the peoples *are* idols, But the LORD made the heavens. ²⁷ Honor and majesty *are* before Him; Strength and gladness are in His place. ²⁸ Give to the LORD, O families of the peoples, Give to the LORD glory and strength. ²⁹ Give to the LORD the glory *due* His name; Bring an offering, and come before Him. Oh, worship the LORD in the beauty of holiness!

Blameless until He comes – do you want to give the Lord a love offering, do want to say sing a song of praise unto Him, it says in 1 Chronicles to worship the Lord in the beauty of holiness; holiness (uncommon – set apart – unlike the world – purity) is beauty before the Lord, it is a form of worship, that raises to the throne as incense, a burnt offering. Want to sing the ultimate worship song to the Lord..... Personal holiness.

1 Chronicles 16:29 (NKJV) ²⁹ Give to the LORD the glory due His name; Bring an offering, and come before Him. Oh, worship the LORD in the beauty of holiness!

Romans 12:1–2 (NKJV) ¹ I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. ² And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.

1 Chronicles 16:30–35 (NKJV) ³⁰ Tremble before Him, all the earth. The world also is firmly established, It shall not be moved. ³¹ Let the heavens rejoice, and let the earth be glad; And let them say among the nations, "The LORD reigns." ³² Let the sea roar, and all its fullness; Let the field rejoice, and all that *is* in it. ³³ Then the trees of the woods shall rejoice before the LORD, For He is coming to judge the earth. ³⁴ Oh, give thanks to the LORD, for *He is* good! For His mercy *endures* forever. ³⁵ And say, "Save us, O God of our salvation; Gather us together, and deliver us from the Gentiles, To give thanks to Your holy name, To triumph in Your praise."

I find it ever so interesting in 1 Chronicles 16, that David would pray the Lord delivers him and the nation from the attacks of the enemy (Gentile in the context meant those against Israel), yet he had been continually defeating and the enemy. David gives us a key insight that is ever so important as followers of Christ and that is to continually be watchful of the attack of the enemy, even after past great victories, even in times of peace and prosperity, we need to remain (applied daily in our personal prayer time) watchful of coming of the enemy (our flesh, the world, and/or the devil)

1 Chronicles 16:35 (NKJV) ³⁵ And say, "Save us, O God of our salvation; Gather us together, and deliver us from the Gentiles, To give thanks to Your holy name, To triumph in Your praise."

Matthew 6:13 (NKJV) ¹³ And do not lead us into temptation, But deliver us from the evil one. For Yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen.

Verse 17-19, commandments to those who are well-off or rich.

(1 Timothy 6:17 NKJV) Command those who are rich in this present age not to be haughty, nor to trust in uncertain riches but in the living God, who gives us richly all things to enjoy.

Don't trust in your riches but store up your treasures in heaven. Riches are uncertain, the economy is unstable at best, don't trust in your riches.

A couple in Oakland California didn't trust in the banks so they hid all their money in their home. Then a fire came through the whole valley and burned their house to the ground. They said we were saving for a raining day, we didn't plan on a fiery night.

who gives us richly all things to enjoy.

Some of the best things in life are free:

- Walk the beach and I don't have to worry about the hurricane.
- Go to the mountain, Skyline Drive, and I'm free to enjoy it.
- Can't afford an expensive library, I just go down to the public library, a full university at my fingertips.

(1 Timothy 6:18 NKJV) Let them do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to give, willing to share,

The richer a person becomes on earth, the stingier they become. I find that the most generous people are those that don't have much. Do you know one of the principles behind giving is, every time you give, you give a piece of yourself away, the selfish piece.

(1 Timothy 6:19 NKJV) storing up for themselves a good foundation for the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life.

You can't take it with you, but you can send it ahead.

(1 Timothy 6:20 NKJV) O Timothy! Guard what was committed to your trust, avoiding the profane and idle babblings and contradictions of what is falsely called knowledge; (1 Timothy 6:21 NKJV) by professing it some have strayed concerning the faith. Grace be with you. Amen.

Verse 20, we'll do a topical study on this in two weeks, this falsely called knowledge, as we look at the creation versus evolution debate. I invite you to be here for that as we open up the science book and we open up the Bible, and we start reading them side by side. And it will be a wonderful study. But I encourage you parents to bring your children. I encourage you youth, to bring your parents. Answer in Genesis says the great falling away of our youth today are not because of the social media, and because of the peer pressure, and because of all those things that we think is the reason that they're not interested in the things of the Lord. But the answer in Genesis said it's because they can't believe chapters one through 11. And when they can't come to accept that creation, and God creating man, and the foundation of our whole world is Genesis, which means in the beginning, and that foundation is all based on chapters one through 11, when you cast that off, there's nothing left to stand on. So tune in for that in two weeks as we study that.

Just ask them, do you believe God spoke the world into existence, do you believe in the flood of Noah (that Noah built the ark), and you will find most saying no I can believe that. But of course, if they do say they believe it, but are living apart from Him, then the door opens to say if you believe that, then how about all the other books of the Bible, and specifically how about the Gospel of Jesus Christ.

I will discuss more than science, for the proof isn't in the science, but in the Bible being written outside of this time domain – so tune in for that study.

1 Timothy 6:20 (KJV 1900) ²⁰ O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called:

Just a closing thought on the wisdom and knowledge of the world -

One of the things we see in First Chronicles 11, men fighting 300 at a time, and the man going into a snow pit to fight a lion. We read of stories past of Samson with a jaw bone, read the story past of David with a sling against a man of mighty armor. And you know, here's a word for us, for someone today. You have to fight without the world's wisdom. The world would say you don't fight 300 at a time. The world would say you don't fight with the jaw bone of a donkey. The world would say you don't go down and fight in a snow pit. God would say go, and fight. Be valiant, because you're the lineage of a valiant father who puts the fight in you, who has the fight in him that overcomes sin, and overcomes death, and has the power to rise again. And I give you that power in your fight personally, and it is a promise to you. But once you try to put in the wisdom of the world, try to put in your logic, and your understanding, and your analysis of how you think it should be, you are as good as defeated because no man would go into a snow pit, a big bowl of snow, and fight a lion. No man would stand against 300 with the jaw bone of a donkey. No man would fight 300. No man would stand in the middle of a lentil field and fight. Only a man who has heard the heart of God speaking to him, go, fight, for I fight with you.

Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Why Do We Study Prophecy?

1 Timothy 6:14

1 Timothy 6:14 (NKJV) ¹⁴ that you keep *this* commandment without spot, blameless until our Lord Jesus Christ's appearing,

Our brother Peter tells us that in the last days, people will scoff at the teaching and declaring of Jesus's soon return. Their very scoffing, is a great indicator of how soon His return is, because more and more are people (even professing believers) saying talking ends days is just doom and gloom.

2 Peter 3:3-4 (NKJV) ³ knowing this first: that scoffers will come in the last days, walking according to their own lusts, ⁴ and saying, "Where is the promise of His coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of creation."

But let's not forget the context of that passage either, and that is that God will keep His Word, and the very fact of His delayed return is because of His great grace, that He wishes none to perish but all seek repentance:

2 Peter 3:8-9 (NKJV) ⁸ But, beloved, do not forget this one thing, that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. ⁹ The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some count slackness, but is longsuffering toward us, not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance.

Some of the very scoffers today are pastors. They say that Bible prophecy is fearmongering, or conspiracy theorist, or just that it is too clouded and shrouded and no man can truly understand it. They say things such as the Book of Revelation should be kept sealed, because who can understand it – to which I say just the title of the book speaks for itself, "Revelation", means revealing, to make known.

Some say it is irrelevant for today and the focus should be on helping people in their personal walks with the Lord, in their marriages, in overcoming strongholds, evangelism, and the likes. I agree with that in part, but not in whole, because..... the study of prophecy, the preparing for the fulfillment of prophecy, will empower every area of those things just mentioned.

There are 3 things that God says He does not want us to be ignorant (unaware) of:

1. His working with the Nation of Israel - (Romans 11)
2. Spiritual Gifts - (1 Corinthians 12)
3. His Second Coming (which means Last Days, for that is when He comes, in the Last Days of earth) - (1 Thessalonians 4)

Romans 11:25-26 (NKJV) ⁵ For I do not desire, brethren, that you should be ignorant of this mystery, lest you should be wise in your own opinion, that blindness in part has happened to Israel until the fullness of the Gentiles has come in. ²⁶ And so all Israel will be saved, as it is written: "The Deliverer will come out of Zion, And He will turn away ungodliness from Jacob;

1 Corinthians 12:1 (NKJV) ¹ Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I do not want you to be ignorant:

1 Thessalonians 4:13-18 (NKJV) ¹³ But I do not want you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning those who have fallen asleep, lest you sorrow as others who have no hope. ¹⁴ For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so God will bring with Him those who sleep in Jesus. ¹⁵ For this we say to you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive and remain until the coming of the Lord will by no means precede those who are asleep. ¹⁶ For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel, and with the trumpet of God. And the dead in Christ will rise first. ¹⁷ Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And thus we shall always be with the Lord. ¹⁸ Therefore comfort one another with these words.

Hence why our topical study today on "Why Do We Study Prophecy?".

Outline: Why Do We Study Prophecy? (1 Timothy 6:14):

- Studying Prophecy Keeps Our Priorities Clear
- Studying Prophecy Keeps Us Seeking Personal Purity
- Studying Prophecy Keeps Our Hearts at Peace
- Studying Prophecy Proves the Bible is Inspired

Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² *For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ *Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

Studying Prophecy Keeps Our Priorities Clear

When we keep our eyes on the soon return of Christ, that our next breath could be in His literal presence, it will make all things fall in their rightful place in our lives.

As we have studied the deception of riches, materialism, titles and positions:

1 Timothy 6:6–10 (NKJV) ⁶ Now godliness with contentment is great gain. ⁷ For we brought nothing into *this* world, and *it* is certain we can carry nothing out. ⁸ And having food and clothing, with these we shall be content. ⁹ But those who desire to be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and *into* many foolish and harmful lusts which drown men in destruction and perdition. ¹⁰ For the love of money is a root of all *kinds* of evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their greediness, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

Paul tells Timothy to flee these things, and to put focus on the things that matter most:

1 Timothy 6:11 (NKJV) ¹¹ *But you, O man of God, flee these things and pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, gentleness.*

Knowing we could see Him in a blink of eye, will have seeking first the kingdom of God

Matthew 6:31–34 (NKJV) ³¹ *“Therefore do not worry, saying, ‘What shall we eat?’ or ‘What shall we drink?’ or ‘What shall we wear?’* ³² *For after all these things the Gentiles seek. For your heavenly Father knows that you need all these things.* ³³ *But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you.* ³⁴ *Therefore do not worry about tomorrow, for tomorrow will worry about its own things. Sufficient for the day is its own trouble.*

It will spur out hearts on to know that God wishes that none perish and all seek repentance and we will know time is running out:

2 Timothy 4:2–5 (NKJV) ² *Preach the word! Be ready in season and out of season. Convince, rebuke, exhort, with all longsuffering and teaching.* ³ *For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but according to their own desires, because they have itching ears, they will heap up for themselves teachers;* ⁴ *and they will turn their ears away from the truth, and be turned aside to fables.* ⁵ *But you be watchful in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry.*

We see that the church that turned the world upside-down all had a consistent belief, that Jesus Christ was coming soon, and what we can see is they believed it was in their lifetime, and thus they lived in an expectancy of His return, and that endowed them with power, because their eyes and hearts were set on the next world, and not this world, and thus they were freest people on the planet.

1 Thessalonians 3:13 (NKJV) ¹³ *so that He may establish your hearts blameless in holiness before our God and Father at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all His saints.*

2 Thessalonians 2:1–2 (NKJV) ¹ Now, brethren, concerning the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ and our gathering together to Him, we ask you, ² not to be soon shaken in mind or troubled, either by spirit or by word or by letter, as if from us, as though the day of Christ had come.

2 Timothy 4:1 (NKJV) ¹ I charge *you* therefore before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, who will judge the living and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom:

Titus 2:12–13 (NKJV) ¹² teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly in the present age, ¹³ looking for the blessed hope and glorious appearing of our great God and Savior Jesus Christ,

Hebrews 9:28 (NKJV) ²⁸ so Christ was offered once to bear the sins of many. To those who eagerly wait for Him He will appear a second time, apart from sin, for salvation.

Revelation 1:7 (NKJV) ⁷ Behold, He is coming with clouds, and every eye will see Him, even they who pierced Him. And all the tribes of the earth will mourn because of Him. Even so, Amen.

Studying Prophecy Keeps Us Seeking Personal Purity

Paul told Timothy to be looking for the soon appearing of Jesus, and two things to flee, materialism and lust:

1 Timothy 6:6–11 (NKJV) ⁶ Now godliness with contentment is great gain. ⁷ For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. ⁸ And having food and clothing, with these we shall be content. ⁹ But those who desire to be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and harmful lusts which drown men in destruction and perdition. ¹⁰ For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their greediness, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. ¹¹ But you, O man of God, flee these things and pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, gentleness.

2 Timothy 2:22 (NKJV) ²² Flee also youthful lusts; but pursue righteousness, faith, love, peace with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

The calling is to all things pure, it is holiness unto the Lord. Paul says to be Blameless till He comes

1 Timothy 6:14 (NKJV) ¹⁴ that you keep this commandment without spot, blameless until our Lord Jesus Christ's appearing,

We are told that those who look and hope unto His soon return, prepares themselves to be pure before Him. That is God stating....that is what is the outcome of looking for His soon return, not that is the calling of what they should do, but who they are because they have eyes set on Christ and His imminent return:

1 John 3:2–3 (NKJV) ² Beloved, now we are children of God; and it has not yet been revealed what we shall be, but we know that when He is revealed, we shall be like Him, for we shall see Him as He is. ³ And everyone who has this hope in Him purifies himself, just as He is pure.

Beloved, study prophecy, be looking and knowing He is coming soon, in a twinkling of an eye, and you will find the built-in power that comes with it. Oh I want to be a man of God, I want to be blameless when He appears, and we make a list of things we are going to do to be blameless.... Yet so often, miss the built-in promise, that everyone who has this hope, finds themselves purifying themselves, just as He is pure.

Studying Prophecy Keeps Our Hearts at Peace

Thirdly, studying prophecy keeps our heart at peace when we see the world waxing worse and worse, darker and darker.

1 Thessalonians 4:16–18 (NKJV) ¹⁶ For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel, and with the trumpet of God. And the dead in Christ will rise first. ¹⁷ Then we who are alive *and* remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And thus we shall always be with the Lord. ¹⁸ Therefore comfort one another with these words.

Revelation 3:10 (NKJV) ¹⁰ Because you have kept My command to persevere, I also will keep you from the hour of trial which shall come upon the whole world, to test those who dwell on the earth.

The next point is prophecy proves this Bible is inspired, that to foretell the things that would be before they happen could only happen from an Author who is outside of this time domain. God says He does that, so all may know He is God. There is no other religious book on the planet that can or has foretold things to come. God says I do that so you may know I am God, and thus we too know He wrote this Book:

Isaiah 42:8–9 (NKJV) ⁸ I am the Lord, that is My name; And My glory I will not give to another, Nor My praise to carved images. ⁹ Behold, the former things have come to pass, And new things I declare; Before they spring forth I tell you of them."

Isaiah 41:22–23 (NKJV) ²² "Let them bring forth and show us what will happen; Let them show the former things, what they were, That we may consider them, And know the latter end of them; Or declare to us things to come. ²³ Show the things that are to come hereafter, That we may know that you are gods; Yes, do good or do evil, That we may be dismayed and see *it* together.

Isaiah 44:6–8 (NKJV) ⁶ "Thus says the Lord, the King of Israel, And his Redeemer, the Lord of hosts: 'I am the First and I am the Last; Besides Me *there is no God.* ⁷ And who can proclaim as I do? Then let him declare it and set it in order for Me, Since I appointed the ancient people. And the things that are coming and shall come, Let them show these to them. ⁸ Do not fear, nor be afraid; Have I not told you from that time, and declared *it*? You are My witnesses. Is there a God besides Me? Indeed ***there is no other Rock; I know not one.*** "

Isaiah 46:9–10 (NKJV) ⁹ Remember the former things of old, For I am God, and *there is no other; I am God, and there is none like Me,* ¹⁰ Declaring the end from the beginning, And from ancient times *things* that are not yet done, Saying, 'My counsel shall stand, And I will do all My pleasure,'

John 13:18–19 (NKJV) ¹⁸ "I do not speak concerning all of you. I know whom I have chosen; but that the Scripture may be fulfilled, '*He who eats bread with Me has lifted up his heel against Me.*' ¹⁹ Now I tell you before it comes, that when it does come to pass, you may believe that I am *He.*

2 Peter 1:19–21 (NKJV) ¹⁹ And so we have the prophetic word confirmed, which you do well to heed as a light that shines in a dark place, until the day dawns and the morning star rises in your hearts; ²⁰ knowing this first, that no prophecy of Scripture is of any private interpretation, ²¹ for prophecy never came by the will of man, but holy men of God spoke as *they were moved by the Holy Spirit.*

Only This Book is Bold Enough / 300 prophecies of Jesus / 25% of Book

Only this book has the boldness to prophesy. 300 prophecies of Jesus Christ fulfilled, and I am not talking about the several hundred other prophecies as they relate to Israel, empires, the Church, and other areas. Twenty-five percent of this book speaks of prophecies. And to date, not one has yet to fail.

Top 8

His Birth & Lineage

- 1.) The Messiah would be born in Bethlehem. Micah 5:2a / Matthew 2:1-2
- 2.) The Messiah would be a descendant of David. Isaiah 9:7 / Matthew 1:1

His Environment & the World Setting

- 3.) The Messiah would be announced to his people 483 years, to the exact day, after the decree to rebuild the city of Jerusalem. Daniel 9:25 / John 12:12-13
- 4.) The Messiah would be killed before the destruction of the temple. Daniel 9:26c / Matthew 27:50-51
- 5.) The Jew's authority to administer capital punishment would be gone when the Messiah arrived. Genesis 49:10c / John 18:31

His Death

- 6.) The Messiah would be sacrificed on the same mountain where God tested Abraham. Genesis 22:14 / Luke 23:33
- 7.) The Messiah's back would be whipped. Isaiah 53:5c / Matthew 27:26
- 8.) The Messiah's hands and feet would be pierced. Psalm 22:16c / Matthew 27:38

All facts that can be backed up by historical writings

The Law of Compound Probability / The Quarter – 10 to 17th / Blindfold

The following probabilities (The Law of Compound Probability) are taken from Peter Stoner in *Science Speaks* (Moody Press, 1963) to show that coincidence is ruled out by the science of probability. Stoner says that by using the modern science of probability in reference to eight prophecies, 'we find that the chance that any man might have lived down to the present time and fulfilled all eight prophecies is 1 in 10 to the 17th.' That would be 1 in 100,000,000,000,000,000. In

order to help us comprehend this staggering probability, Stoner illustrates it by supposing that "we take 10 to the 17th silver dollars and lay them on the face of Texas. They will cover all of the state two feet deep.

"Now mark one of these silver dollars and stir the whole mass thoroughly, all over the state. Blindfold a man and tell him that he can travel as far as he wishes, but he must pick up one silver dollar and say that this is the right one. What chance would he have of getting the right one? Just the same chance that the prophets would have had of writing these eight prophecies and having them all come true in any one man."

And here is peace for anyone here today, being that God is Eternal....and He never changes. He never changes, because He is eternal. His Word is eternal, therefore His eternal Word of Him the eternal God, is the same yesterday =, today, and forever.

- God's eternal Word covers my past and comforts me that it is forgiven
- God's eternal Word covers my today, gives me strength for today, and the promise I will never leave you nor forsake you, because I can't because I am eternal.
- God's eternal Word covers my forever because all is in His hands, and He will deliver me.

Hebrews 13:8 (NKJV) ⁸ Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, today, and forever.

Hebrews 13:5-6 (NKJV) ⁵ Let your conduct be without covetousness; be content with such things as you have. For He Himself has said, "I will never leave you nor forsake you."⁶ So we may boldly say: "The LORD is my helper; I will not fear. What can man do to me?"

Oh the comfort knowing that My God is eternal, and His Words are eternal, and He prepares my eternity (as well as my today and yesterday).

I love what Charles Spurgeon said regarding God's Word, " Do as Thou hast said!"

Studying Prophecy Proves the Bible is Inspired

We have studied, that in the latter times (the last of the last days) some will depart from the faith. Why? Because Shepherds and churches will quit teaching the Word of God. Because they will be more concerned about budgets and seats than they will God's glory and honor, and saving souls from fires of hell.

1 Timothy 4:1-5 (NKJV) ¹ Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons, ² speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron, ³ forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from foods which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and know the truth. ⁴ For every creature of God is good, and nothing is to be refused if it is received with thanksgiving; ⁵ for it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.

2 Timothy 4:1-5 (NKJV) ¹ I charge you therefore before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, who will judge the living and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom: ² Preach the word! Be ready in season and out of season. Convince, rebuke, exhort, with all longsuffering and teaching. ³ For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but according to their own desires, because they have itching ears, they will heap up for themselves teachers; ⁴ and they will turn their ears away from the truth, and be turned aside to fables. ⁵ But you be watchful in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry.

Some of the deceiving spirits and doctrine of demons will be the lie of evolution. Paul tells young Timothy v.11 – the man of God), to fight the good fight (v.12), until the Day of Christ appearing (v.14), and then down in verse 20 to watch out for "science-so called", because verse 21 it has and will lead some astray. In both verses (14 & 20) the call is to keep, to guard, to protect, to hold fast to. Because..... to not will be to lose. The call is to fight, a fight that is a good fight (worthy of the effort).

1 Timothy 6:11-16 (NKJV) ¹¹ But you, O man of God, flee these things and pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, gentleness. ¹² Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, to which you were also called and have confessed the good confession in the presence of many witnesses. ¹³ I urge you in the sight of God who gives life to all things, and before Christ Jesus who witnessed the good confession before Pontius Pilate, ¹⁴ that you keep this commandment without spot, blameless until our Lord Jesus Christ's appearing, ¹⁵ which He will manifest in His own time, He who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings and Lord of lords, ¹⁶ who alone has immortality, dwelling in unapproachable light, whom no man has seen or can see, to whom be honor and everlasting power. Amen.

1 Timothy 6:20–21 (NKJV)

²⁰ O Timothy! Guard what was committed to your trust, avoiding the profane and idle babblings and contradictions of what is falsely called knowledge—²¹ by professing it some have strayed concerning the faith. Grace be with you. Amen.

1 Timothy 6:20–21 (KJV 1900)

²⁰ O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called: ²¹ Which some professing have erred concerning the faith. Grace be with thee. Amen.

As for some, many believe church fellowship is for the intimacy and the worship, to which again I agree in part but not in whole. I think of a man who was known as a man after God's own heart, a man I can relate to who was flawed in many ways, but still a lover of God. David was a battled hardened warrior; and as we read in 1 Chronicles 23 he was a maker of worship instruments, and we know of his psalms and poems. David was a warrior and a worshipper. I believe a picture of the followers of Christ, we are to fight the fight, and worship well. Not all fight and no worship, and not all worship and no fight, but a balanced warrior and worshipper.

1 Samuel 13:14 (NKJV) ¹⁴ But now your kingdom shall not continue. The LORD has sought for Himself a man after His own heart, and the LORD has commanded him to be commander over His people, because you have not kept what the LORD commanded you."

1 Chronicles 23:1–5 (NKJV) ¹ So when David was old and full of days, he made his son Solomon king over Israel. ² And he gathered together all the leaders of Israel, with the priests and the Levites. ³ Now the Levites were numbered from the age of thirty years and above; and the number of individual males was thirty-eight thousand. ⁴ Of these, twenty-four thousand were to look after the work of the house of the LORD, six thousand were officers and judges, ⁵ four thousand were gatekeepers, and four thousand praised the LORD with musical instruments, "which I made," said David, "for giving praise."

1 Samuel 18:6–7 (NKJV) ⁶ Now it had happened as they were coming home, when David was returning from the slaughter of the Philistine, that the women had come out of all the cities of Israel, singing and dancing, to meet King Saul, with tambourines, with joy, and with musical instruments. ⁷ So the women sang as they danced, and said: "Saul has slain his thousands, And David his ten thousands."

Well you may be saying you seem to drifting off the point of "Studying Prophecy Proves the Bible is Inspired". This is most applicable for our next points, but also what I said about the straying off of the faith, even departing of the faith, because people following "science-so called" of evolution and leaving the faith. The majority of the young generation today say they are not followers of Christ because they cannot believe the stories of the Bible, nor that the Bible is the Word of God.

But when you read prophecies written thousands of years of ago, and watch them transpire before your very eyes, you are left with faith that this Book is written outside of our time-domain.

We Study these 14 groupings:

1 - Israel / Jerusalem / The Middle East

The Nation Shall be Born in a Day

Isaiah 66:8 (NKJV) ⁸ Who has heard such a thing? Who has seen such things? Shall the earth be made to give birth in one day? **Or shall a nation be born at once?** For as soon as Zion was in labor, She gave birth to her children.

God will regather the Jewish people to Israel in Last Days

(Ezekiel 36:24 NKJV) "For I will take you from among the nations, gather you out of all countries, and bring you into your own land

Israel will be a Stumbling Block & a Cup of Trembling in the Last Days

Zechariah 12:1-3 (KJV) ¹The burden of the word of the LORD for Israel, saith the LORD, which stretcheth forth the heavens, and layeth the foundation of the earth, and formeth the spirit of man within him. ²**Behold, I will make Jerusalem a cup of trembling unto all the people round about, when they shall be in the siege both against Judah and against Jerusalem.** ³And in that day will I make Jerusalem a burdensome stone for all people: all that burden themselves with it shall be cut in pieces, though all the people of the earth be gathered together against it.

2 - The European Superstate / The AntiChrist / 7 Year Peace Pact

Revelation 13:1–2 (NKJV) ¹ Then I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his heads a blasphemous name. ² Now the beast which

I saw was like a leopard, his feet were like the feet of a bear, and his mouth like the mouth of a lion. The dragon gave him his power, his throne, and great authority.

Daniel 7:24–25 (NKJV) ²⁴ The ten horns are ten kings Who shall arise from this kingdom. And another shall rise after them; He shall be different from the first ones, And shall subdue three kings. ²⁵ He shall speak pompous words against the Most High, Shall persecute the saints of the Most High, And shall intend to change times and law. Then the saints shall be given into his hand For a time and times and half a time.

Daniel 9:27 (NKJV) ²⁷ Then he shall confirm a covenant with many for one week; But in the middle of the week He shall bring an end to sacrifice and offering. And on the wing of abominations shall be one who makes desolate, Even until the consummation, which is determined, Is poured out on the desolate.”

3 - Earthquakes / Famines / Pestilence / Wars

Matthew 24:3–8 (NKJV) ³ Now as He sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to Him privately, saying, “Tell us, when will these things be? And what will be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?” ⁴ And Jesus answered and said to them: “Take heed that no one deceives you. ⁵ For many will come in My name, saying, ‘I am the Christ,’ and will deceive many. ⁶ And you will hear of wars and rumors of wars. See that you are not troubled; for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. ⁷ For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. And there will be famines, pestilences, and earthquakes in various places. ⁸ All these are the beginning of sorrows.

4 - One World Government / One World Religion / False Prophet

Revelation 13:1–8 (NKJV) ¹ Then I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his heads a blasphemous name. ² Now the beast which I saw was like a leopard, his feet were like the feet of a bear, and his mouth like the mouth of a lion. The dragon gave him his power, his throne, and great authority. ³ And I saw one of his heads as if it had been mortally wounded, and his deadly wound was healed. And all the world marveled and followed the beast. ⁴ So they worshiped the dragon who gave authority to the beast; and they worshiped the beast, saying, “Who is like the beast? Who is able to make war with him?” ⁵ And he was given a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies, and he was given authority to continue for forty-two months. ⁶ Then he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme His name, His tabernacle, and those who dwell in heaven. ⁷ It was granted to him to make war with the saints and to overcome them. And authority was given him over every tribe, tongue, and nation. ⁸ All who dwell on the earth will worship him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

Revelation 13:11–17 (NKJV) ¹¹ Then I saw another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb and spoke like a dragon. ¹² And he exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence, and causes the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. ¹³ He performs great signs, so that he even makes fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men. ¹⁴ And he deceives those who dwell on the earth—by those signs which he was granted to do in the sight of the beast, telling those who dwell on the earth to make an image to the beast who was wounded by the sword and lived. ¹⁵ He was granted power to give breath to the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak and cause as many as would not worship the image of the beast to be killed. ¹⁶ He causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand or on their foreheads, ¹⁷ and that no one may buy or sell except one who has the mark or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

Revelation 17:1–6 (NKJV) ¹ Then one of the seven angels who had the seven bowls came and talked with me, saying to me, “Come, I will show you the judgment of the great harlot who sits on many waters, ² with whom the kings of the earth committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth were made drunk with the wine of her fornication.” ³ So he carried me away in the Spirit into the wilderness. And I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast which was full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. ⁴ The woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls, having in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and the filthiness of her fornication. ⁵ And on her forehead a name was written: MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH ⁶ I saw the woman, drunk with the blood of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus. And when I saw her, I marveled with great amazement.

5 - Iniquity / Sin Will Abound

(2 Timothy 3:1–5 (NKJV) ¹ But know this, that in the last days perilous times will come: ² For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, ³ unloving, unforgiving, slanderers, without self-control, brutal, despisers of good, ⁴ traitors, headstrong, haughty, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God, ⁵ having a form of godliness but denying its power. And from such people turn away!

(Matthew 24:12 NKJV) “And because lawlessness will abound, the love of many will grow cold.

6 - Apostasy / The Great Deception

Some would depart from the faith and go into False Religions – 1 Tim 4:1

1 Timothy 4:1–2 (NKJV) ¹ Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons, ² speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron,

False Teachers/Religions will be many – Matt 24:5

(Matthew 24:5 NKJV) "For many will come in My name, saying, 'I am the Christ,' and will deceive many.

Matthew 24:24–25 (NKJV) ²⁴ For false christs and false prophets will rise and show great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect. ²⁵ See, I have told you beforehand.

People would mock about the last days and not believe-2 Peter 3:3; Jude 18.

2 Peter 3:3–4 (NKJV) ³ knowing this first: that scoffers will come in the last days, walking according to their own lusts, ⁴ and saying, "Where is the promise of His coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of creation."

7 - Knowledge Shall Increase

Daniel 12:2–4 (NKJV) ² And many of those who sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, Some to everlasting life, Some to shame and everlasting contempt. ³ Those who are wise shall shine Like the brightness of the firmament, And those who turn many to righteousness Like the stars forever and ever. ⁴ "But you, Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book until the time of the end; many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall increase."

8 - The Magog Invasion

Ezekiel 38 (NKJV) ¹ Now the word of the Lord came to me, saying, ² "Son of man, set your face against Gog, of the land of Magog, the prince of Rosh, Meshech, and Tubal, and prophesy against him, ³ and say, 'Thus says the Lord God: "Behold, I am against you, O Gog, the prince of Rosh, Meshech, and Tubal. ⁴ I will turn you around, put hooks into your jaws, and lead you out, with all your army, horses, and horsemen, all splendidly clothed, a great company with bucklers and shields, all of them handling swords. ⁵ Persia, Ethiopia, and Libya are with them, all of them with shield and helmet; ⁶ Gomer and all its troops; the house of Togarmah from the far north and all its troops—many people are with you. ⁷ "Prepare yourself and be ready, you and all your companies that are gathered about you; and be a guard for them

*In Ezekiel 38-39 God says that in the Last Days Magog (Russia), Iran (Muslim), Libya (Muslim), Sudan/Ethiopia (mix Christian & Muslim), and Turkey (Muslim) will invade Israel during a time they have peace (Ezk 38:11). But, God will preserve them – without any help from other nations. This will happen in a time of Peace in Israel.

9 - The Rebuilt Temple in Jerusalem

Matthew 24:15–16 (NKJV) ¹⁵ "Therefore when you see the 'abomination of desolation,' spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place" (whoever reads, let him understand), ¹⁶ "then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains.

Daniel 9:27 (NKJV) ²⁷ Then he shall confirm a covenant with many for one week; But in the middle of the week He shall bring an end to sacrifice and offering. And on the wing of abominations shall be one who makes desolate, Even until the consummation, which is determined, Is poured out on the desolate."

10 - Where's America?

No mention of America type nation in the last days – so where is America?

11 - The Mark of the Beast

Revelation 13:16–18 (NKJV) ¹⁶ He causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand or on their foreheads, ¹⁷ and that no one may buy or sell except one who has the mark or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. ¹⁸ Here is wisdom. Let him who has understanding calculate the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man: His number is 666.

12 - Babylon the World Headquarters / World Economic Center

(Revelation 14:8 NKJV) And another angel followed, saying, "Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she has made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication."

Revelation 18:10–11 (NKJV) ¹⁰ standing at a distance for fear of her torment, saying, 'Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city! For in one hour your judgment has come.' ¹¹ "And the merchants of the earth will weep and mourn over her, for no one buys their merchandise anymore:

13 - The Battle of Armageddon

Revelation 16:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ And they gathered them together to the place called in Hebrew, Armageddon.

Revelation 19:17–21 (NKJV) ¹⁷ Then I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the birds that fly in the midst of heaven, "Come and gather together for the supper of the great God, ¹⁸ that you may eat the flesh of kings, the flesh of captains, the flesh of mighty men, the flesh of horses and of those who sit on them, and the flesh of all people, free and slave, both small and great." ¹⁹ And I saw the beast, the kings of the earth, and their armies,

gathered together to make war against Him who sat on the horse and against His army. ²⁰ Then the beast was captured, and with him the false prophet who worked signs in his presence, by which he deceived those who received the mark of the beast and those who worshiped his image. These two were cast alive into the lake of fire burning with brimstone. ²¹ And the rest were killed with the sword which proceeded from the mouth of Him who sat on the horse. And all the birds were filled with their flesh.

14 - The Good News

1 Thessalonians 4:16–18 (NKJV)¹⁶ For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel, and with the trumpet of God. And the dead in Christ will rise first. ¹⁷ Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up (Greek = harpazo / Latin = rapturo / English = rapture) together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And thus we shall always be with the Lord. ¹⁸ Therefore comfort one another with these words.

John 3:16 (NKJV)¹⁶ For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.

Conclusion

Outline: Why Do We Study Prophecy? (1 Timothy 6:14):

- Studying Prophecy Keeps Our Priorities Clear
- Studying Prophecy Keeps Us Seeking Personal Purity
- Studying Prophecy Keeps Our Hearts at Peace
- Studying Prophecy Proves the Bible is Inspired

In the scriptures we read of the “sons of Issachar” they were known for being valiant men of war. And, they were known for those who had understanding of the times, to know what Israel ought to do. So God raises up fighters today, warriors (and worshippers) who are given knowledge, so they will do something about it. God did the same with Abraham, as before He was to destroy Sodom He said to the two angels with Him, should I share with Abraham what I am about to do? And so He shared with Abraham, and Abraham did something about it, He interceded with the Lord on behalf of the people, and so we see a power and calling for us in these two (Abraham and Issachar), getting into the fight, prayer and evangelism

1 Chronicles 7:1–4 (NKJV)¹ The sons of Issachar were Tola, Puah, Jashub, and Shimron—four in all. ² The sons of Tola were Uzzi, Rephaiah, Jeriel, Jahmai, Jibsam, and Shemuel, heads of their father’s house. The sons of Tola were mighty men of valor in their generations; their number in the days of David was twenty-two thousand six hundred. ³ The son of Uzzi was Izrahiah, and the sons of Izrahiah were Michael, Obadiah, Joel, and Ishiah. All five of them were chief men. ⁴ And with them, by their generations, according to their fathers’ houses, were thirty-six thousand troops ready for war; for they had many wives and sons.

1 Chronicles 12:32 (NKJV)³² of the sons of Issachar who had understanding of the times, to know what Israel ought to do, their chiefs were two hundred; and all their brethren were at their command;

Genesis 18:16–25 (NKJV)¹⁶ Then the men rose from there and looked toward Sodom, and Abraham went with them to send them on the way. ¹⁷ And the LORD said, “Shall I hide from Abraham what I am doing, ¹⁸ since Abraham shall surely become a great and mighty nation, and all the nations of the earth shall be blessed in him? ¹⁹ For I have known him, in order that he may command his children and his household after him, that they keep the way of the LORD, to do righteousness and justice, that the LORD may bring to Abraham what He has spoken to him.” ²⁰ And the LORD said, “Because the outcry against Sodom and Gomorrah is great, and because their sin is very grave, ²¹ I will go down now and see whether they have done altogether according to the outcry against it that has come to Me; and if not, I will know.” ²² Then the men turned away from there and went toward Sodom, but Abraham still stood before the LORD. ²³ And Abraham came near and said, “Would You also destroy the righteous with the wicked? ²⁴ Suppose there were fifty righteous within the city; would You also destroy the place and not spare it for the fifty righteous that were in it? ²⁵ Far be it from You to do such a thing as this, to slay the righteous with the wicked, so that the righteous should be as the wicked; far be it from You! Shall not the Judge of all the earth do right?”

Outline: Why Do We Study Prophecy? (1 Timothy 6:14):

- Studying Prophecy Keeps Our Priorities Clear
- Studying Prophecy Keeps Us Seeking Personal Purity
- Studying Prophecy Keeps Our Hearts at Peace
- Studying Prophecy Proves the Bible is Inspired

Prayer

The Word of God is Living and Powerful, and is ready, and will do a mighty work in our lives.

Hebrews 4:12 (NKJV) ¹² *For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

In Every Study

- Who Is God? (How Great is He?)
- What Does He Think of Me? (How Wonderful Are His Thoughts Towards Me?)
- What Does He Want Me to Do?
- What Can I Boldly Request of Him?
- What Do I Need to Be on Guard of When I Leave Here Today?

Boldly come to the throne of grace, ask God to reveal Himself in a mighty way to you, and to do I might work in you, and through you.

Hebrews 4:16 (NKJV) ¹⁶ *Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

Science Fiction

1 Timothy 6:20-21

We started all the way back in chapter one and Paul is telling Timothy, stay in Ephesus, which no doubt he told him that because Timothy did not want to stay in Ephesus, he wanted to get out of Ephesus.

1 Timothy 1:3 (NKJV) ³ As I urged you when I went into Macedonia—remain in Ephesus that you may charge some that they teach no other doctrine,

Although 200 miles away, the Grecian culture of that time is a good picture of Ephesus; higher learning, deep philosophy, and the talking of the things of God as foolishness.

Acts 17:16–21 (NKJV) ¹⁶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was provoked within him when he saw that the city was given over to idols. ¹⁷ Therefore he reasoned in the synagogue with the Jews and with the Gentile worshipers, and in the marketplace daily with those who happened to be there. ¹⁸ Then certain Epicurean and Stoic philosophers encountered him. And some said, “What does this babbler want to say?” Others said, “He seems to be a proclaimer of foreign gods,” because he preached to them Jesus and the resurrection. ¹⁹ And they took him and brought him to the Areopagus, saying, “May we know what this new doctrine is of which you speak?” ²⁰ For you are bringing some strange things to our ears. Therefore we want to know what these things mean.” ²¹ For all the Athenians and the foreigners who were there spent their time in nothing else but either to tell or to hear some new thing.

Paul tells Timothy, be on guard about those and what they call (OKJV) science-so called.

1 Timothy 6:20–21 (NKJV)

²⁰ O Timothy! Guard what was committed to your trust, avoiding the profane and idle babblings and contradictions of what is falsely called knowledge—²¹ by professing it some have strayed concerning the faith. Grace be with you. Amen.

1 Timothy 6:20–21 (KJV 1900)

²⁰ O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called: ²¹ Which some professing have erred concerning the faith. Grace be with thee. Amen.

Intimidated by the Intellectuals – there is no personal God

Again, Paul is writing this young Pastor Timothy to instruct and guide him in the ministry. Timothy being young, would have been easily intimidated by guys that would come on the scene with all this spiritual or academic knowledge. They would say Timothy you don't get it; you haven't been educated by in the finest Universities by the brightest teachers in the world. These so-called intellectuals, the educated, those with the Masters and PHD's, would say Timothy, science disproves conclusively that there is a personal creative God.

Barna Poll:

A majority of twenty-somethings—61% of today's young adults—had been church-ed at one point during their teen years but they are now spiritually disengaged (i.e., not actively attending church, reading the Bible, or praying). —George Barna

One of the main reasons given and found in follow-up studies/interviews, was that they could no longer believe all the accounts and stories in the Bible are true. One of the leading reasons, is the doubt that is cast on the great debate/discussion of Evolution versus Creation.

Paul says,

(1 Timothy 6:20 KJV) O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called:

Science Based on Facts

There was a time when science was based on factual evidence, something you could prove, but today it is based many times on nothingness. It can seem so intimidating when they pour all their so-called Scientific Facts on us. For something to be a scientific law it must be repeatable. For instance the Law of Gravity is a scientific law because drop a pumpkin from the top of this building and it will fall (and smash to prove it) every time. But man is so set on removing God from the classroom, from the schools, that they take theories (something that is not repeatable),

and then present them as facts. For instance, the Evolution Theory is hardly ever even called that anymore, but simply taught in the public schools, received in the colleges, as a fact rather than a theory. I work in aviation, I have launched rockets, built next generation airplanes and helicopters, and never once in 35 years have we ever defied the Law of Aerodynamics or Gravity....ever! Yet today when it comes to "In the Beginning" man replaces laws with theories, defies laws, and no one says that is totally inconsistent with science. From public schools to higher education, they slowly teach the children and then young adults to not think for themselves anymore, but listen to what the so-called wise and intelligentsia in the academia will tell you what to think. It is happening today with this COVID pandemic, as they say listen to what we say science is, and don't try to question it, just do what we tell you to do.

College Education

I'm reminded of the story of the young man who came home from his first semester in college at a big city university, his dad, a blue-collar worker, says how was it son, oh it y was great dad we are learning so many things. As the son goes on the dad could detect a tone and attitude that his son was talking down to him because his father never went to college. As the son went on he said dad, science fascinates me, we created an acid in the lab that can eat through anything, and dad we created that right in our very lab he says pridefully. Thinking he just proved he is now the smart one of the family and that his father is just a hunky from the steel mills he sits down in front of his father with the "what do you think of that look". The dad shakes his head, that's good son, so what do you keep it in?

Cross-Examined by the Obvious

Evolution, it looks so solid, so sure of itself, until it cross-examined by the obvious. This study will look at some of the obvious errors of science, the majors contradictions this evolution theory has against the facts of science.

Evolution – Replacement to Creation

Evolution comes in with all its facts, now and then they may confess it is just a theory, but go into the high schools and universities and you don't hear them teaching it as an alternative to Creation, but in replacement of Creation.

World Based on 2 Laws

This whole world is energy; therefore, all Science is based on 2 Laws. If you violate any one of these laws, then your theory must be thrown out. Because without energy, there is no power to perform anything. Energy is the building block of the Universe.

So, we will take an obvious look at these Laws and what they mean to Evolution.

The First Law of Thermodynamics

The First Law of Thermodynamics is known as the "Law of Energy Conservation". It states that energy cannot be created nor destroyed; it can only change from one form to another. Simply meaning there is no new energy being created.

Energy for Big Bang

For the Evolution Theory the question must be asked if energy cannot be created nor destroyed, then where did the energy come for the "Big Bang."

Genesis Account ----Bara/Asah-

Interesting, in Genesis God uses two different words for create. One word is to create out of nothing; the other is to create out of existing substance.

(Genesis 1:1 KJV) In the beginning God created (bara) the heaven and the earth.

Bara – means to create out of nothing

*(Genesis 1:7 KJV) And God made (asah) the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so.
Asah – create from existing*

How did the writer of Genesis almost 4,000 years ago know the First Law of Thermodynamics?

The Second Law of Thermodynamics

The Second Law of Thermodynamics is known as the “Law of Energy Decay.” Every system left to itself will move from order to disorder.

Examples

A few practical examples is that new car you paid 20,000\$ for five years doesn't look so new now does it. You that are 40, go look at your High School Class photo. Go look at your kids' room a day after you cleaned it.

Disorder cannot Evolve in Order

The Second Law therefore concludes that disorder cannot evolve into order, neither can a simple structure evolve into a more complex one. The First Law of Thermodynamics prevents a “Big Bang” from happening from nothing, and the Second Law prevents that bang (which never could have happened) from ever organizing into the complex ordered system we call our universe.

Scriptures-

*(Isaiah 51:6 KJV) Lift up your eyes to the heavens, and look upon the earth beneath: for the heavens shall vanish away like smoke, **and the earth shall wax old like a garment**,*

*(Matthew 24:35 KJV) **Heaven and earth shall pass away**, but my words shall not pass away.*

(Psalms 102:25 NKJV) Of old You laid the foundation of the earth, And the heavens are the work of Your hands.

(Psalms 102:26 NKJV) They will perish, but You will endure; Yes, they will all grow old like a garment; Like a cloak You will change them, And they will be changed.

(Psalms 102:27 NKJV) But You are the same, And Your years will have no end.

Now by violating these two laws there is nothing left to build the Evolution Theory, but we might as well dispel some other key points:

The 3rd Law of Motion

The 3rd Law of Motion states that for every action there is an equal and opposite reaction, and no effect can be greater than the cause.

No Magic Tornadoes

This means that a tornado could not come through a junk yard and a fully functional Boeing 747 be the outcome

This law leads us to the question of how we can explain such a highly complex ordered system the universe is in if it all began with a big explosion.

Our Galaxy-

Our Universe is made up of countless Galaxies, within each galaxy are many solar systems (with each solar system consisting of a burning star and its family of sub planets). Our Galaxy is called the Milky Way. It is estimated that there are about 100 billion stars in our galaxy alone. And, are you ready for this, within telescope range there are about 100 million other such galaxies like ours, and who knows how many beyond that.

The earth is 93 million miles from the sun, and Pluto which is the last planet in our solar system, on the average stays 3.6 billion miles from the sun, that means this solar system is 7 billion miles in diameter. Consider this is just one solar system that comprises our whole Galaxy. Just take my conservation calculation, if there are 100 million galaxies, each 7 billion miles in diameter, then the universe is 700,000,000,000,000,000, miles in diameter.

66.600mph / 24hr spin

Here is what is most interesting: The earth orbits the sun one time a year at the speed of 66,600mph. That speed is just enough to offset the gravitation pull of the sun, for if the speed was any greater it would pull away from the sun and freeze, if it was any slower it would pull closer to the sun and be scorched. The earth rotates on its axis every 24 hours, giving equal amounts of light and darkness, if it didn't the earth would either be a desert or a sub-zero wasteland.

9 subplanets / 100million Galaxies in Motion-

Even more amazing is the fact that the other 8 planets in our solar system must stay on their exact paths, if they did not, they would collide into each other destroying themselves. If we look at the big picture, every solar system within every 100 million plus galaxies throughout the universe must stay in perfect order or else galaxies would start colliding into galaxy destroying themselves.

Scriptures -

How do explain how the universe this vast is held together?

(Isaiah 48:13 KJV) Mine hand also hath laid the foundation of the earth, and my right hand hath spanned the heavens: when I call unto them, they stand up together.

(Psalms 147:4 NKJV) He counts the number of the stars; He calls them all by name.

(Psalms 147:5 NKJV) Great is our Lord, and mighty in power; His understanding is infinite.

(Isaiah 40:22 NKJV) It is He who sits above the circle of the earth, And its inhabitants are like grasshoppers, Who stretches out the heavens like a curtain, And spreads them out like a tent to dwell in.

The Law of Biogenesis

The Law of Biogenesis says that life can only arise from life which is similar to itself.

Evolution defies this law, because they say life evolved from inorganic (no life present) substance into an organic (life present) substance. So you start with nothing, then electrons form, then protons, then atoms, then amino acids, then nucleotides, then proteins, then DNA, then protozoa, then fish, amphibians, reptiles, mammals, and then man.

So in the beginning all this matter was floating around space, then it formed together into a mass and exploded. Over time it formed into the solar systems we know today, and then building blocks of life appeared out of this organic matter, and then life began to evolve.

Glass of Water-

Now, If I took a glass of water and said tomorrow a man will pop out of it, you would say I'm crazy. If I said in 1 billion years a man would pop out, people would say that's possible. Given enough time anything can happen. That is what the backbone of Evolution is, Time, for they need time to cover all the Scientific Laws they defy.

Billions of Years for Evolution

They say evolution is a process that would take billions of years to happen. Given enough time anything is possible, for the Evolution Theory, they estimate the age of the universe between 9-15 billion years old.

Shrinking Sun

Now back to the First Law of Thermodynamics, which states that Energy cannot be created nor destroyed, it can only change properties.

The Sun is shrinking at the rate of 0.1 percent per century, or the equivalent of 5 feet per hour. It changes properties as it is absorbed into the other planets (Hence the global warming we are seeing today). At this rate 100,000 years ago the sun would have been twice as large as it is today. The size and radiation of the sun 1,000,000 years ago would have made life on the earth impossible. 20 million years ago the sun would have been large enough to touch the earth. The size of the sun millions of years ago nullifies the Evolution Theory, for they say they needed billions of years for the first life form to develop.

The Earth's Magnetic Field

Analysis and data collected over the last 130 years shows that the earth's magnetic field is getting weaker and weaker every year. If we were to reverse the decay recorded, and add it up backwards, to just 30,000 years ago then the magnetic strength of the earth would have been sufficient to generate temperatures more than 5000 degree Celsius. This temperature is sufficient to melt or vaporize the elements of the earth.

The Earth's magnetic field is the magnetic field that surrounds the Earth. It is sometimes called the geomagnetic field. The Earth's magnetic field is created by the rotation of the Earth and Earth's core. It shields the Earth against harmful particles in space.

The Moon Dust

When we went to the Moon, all the smart people there at NASA were basing the age of the Universe on millions of years old. Go to the Smithsonian in DC and you will see in the museum of natural history everything is based on an Old earth, billions and billions of years old, all this came from the theory of Evolution. Well with the use of satellite technology the scientist are capable of determining how much cosmic dust filters into the earth atmosphere every year. They calculated that the moon would gather at the same rate as the earth, and based on 4.5 billion years, there would be over 50 feet of cosmic dust. They calculated that in when they designed the Lunar Module, and that is why there are those big pads on the base, so they wouldn't sink into the dust.

When they landed they found only a few inches of dust, what would be equivalent to less than 10,000 years of accumulation.

Obvious fact, there wasn't billion and billion of years for evolution to happen; the Laws of Thermodynamics prove it.

We could cover other areas if time permitted, such as the:

Fossil Record-

Darwin said the key to validating the Evolution theory would be the Fossil Record, that there will be transitional fossils. 1859 Darwin wrote, "the Origin of the Species." Still to this day, almost 150 years later, still no transitional form found.

Geological Column

Uses circular reasoning. It is based on the evolutionary theory, that lower simple organisms evolved into more complex organisms. For example protozoa into fish, into amphibian, into reptiles, into mammal, into man. Then they estimate how many billions years it would take to evolve from each stage. Then, when they find a fossil, say a fish, they go to their table and say this fossil is so many billion years old. Our country has bought into it because if you go to the museum of natural History, you will see the Geological Column when you enter the display, and then see every display is dated millions of years old.

The Missing Link -

The search continues.

The Monkey Business

Heidleberg Man

Built from a jawbone

Nebraska Man, 1922 (Henry Osborn)

Built from just one tooth

Later discover to be an extinct pig

Pitldown Man, 1912 (Charles Dawson)

Built from a jaw bone of a modern ape

A deliberate fraud. Filed and treated with iron salts

Peking Man, 1921

Evidence disappeared, an outright fraud

Neanderthal man

Found in a cave in the Neander Valley near Dusseldorf

Int'l Congress of Zoology, 1958, determined was an old man suffering from arthritis

Java Man, 1922

Concealed evidence, teeth were of an orangutan.

Mutations -

Scientific test prove that 99% of mutations are harmful, yet evolution say it is that 1% over billion of years that have created these amazing bodies we live in.

The Human Body / DNA-

Just the human eye, amazing, the human eye has 100 million rods and cones, and the neurons perform 10 billion calculations per second. Charles Darwin himself said the chance of the human eye evolving is ludicrous.

(Psalms 139:13 NKJV) For You formed my inward parts; You covered me in my mother's womb.

(Psalms 139:14 NKJV) I will praise You, for I am fearfully and wonderfully made; Marvelous are Your works, And that my soul knows very well.

We Walk By Faith

For us who believe, for most of us we didn't need to know all these things, we saw beyond the universe, we looked at the depth of our sin and what it cost, God's only Son.

(2 Corinthians 5:7 KJV) (For we walk by faith, not by sight:)

The bible isn't a book of science, but when it speaks of science it is always right on: -

The Earth Hangs on Nothing

*--- (Job 26:7 NKJV) He stretches out the north over empty space; **He hangs the earth on nothing.***

This was written 4,000 years ago when the common belief that the earth was held up by four elephants standing on a turtle.

The Round Earth

- *----(Isaiah 40:22 NKJV) It is He who sits **above the circle of the earth**, And its inhabitants are like grasshoppers, Who stretches out the heavens like a curtain, And spreads them out like a tent to dwell in.*

- Written approximately 2,700 years ago. Yet it was just 1492 Columbus sailed the Ocean Blue, and everyone said he was going to fall off the face of the earth because the earth was flat.

The Earth's Water Cycle

- --- (Ecclesiastes 1:7 NKJV) *All the rivers run into the sea, Yet the sea is not full; To the place from which the rivers come, **There they return again.***
- Written 3,000 years ago

The Expanding Universe

- ---- (Isaiah 51:13 KJV) *And forgettest the LORD thy maker, that hath **stretched forth the heavens, and laid the foundations of the earth;***
- Science has proven that the universe is expanding and this was written 2,700 years ago. The word "stretched forth" means to keep expanding.

Light Divides

- (Job 38:24 KJV) ***By what way is the light parted, which scattereth the east wind upon the earth?***
- The Light spectrum, was only discovered a few hundred years ago.

Paths in the Sea

- (Psalms 8:8 KJV) *The fowl of the air, and the fish of the sea, and whatsoever **passeth through the paths of the seas.***
- Paths in the sea wasn't known in the shipping industry until only a hundred or so years ago.

The Jet Stream

- (Ecclesiastes 1:6 NKJV) *The wind goes toward the south, And turns around to the north; The wind whirls about continually, **And comes again on its circuit.***

Thermodynamic Principles

- (2 Peter 3:10 KJV) *But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, **and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.***
- Spoken of in the Bible 2000 years ago.

As we discussed in our last study, and why we study prophecy, because prophecy proves this Bible is inspired, that to foretell the things that would be before they happen could only happen from an Author who is outside of this time domain. God says He does that, so all may know He is God. There is no other religious book on the planet that can or has foretold things to come. God says I do that so you may know I am God, and thus we too know He wrote this Book:

Isaiah 42:8-9 (NKJV) ⁸ I am the Lord, that is My name; And My glory I will not give to another, Nor My praise to carved images. ⁹ Behold, the former things have come to pass, And new things I declare; Before they spring forth I tell you of them."

Isaiah 41:22-23 (NKJV) ²² "Let them bring forth and show us what will happen; Let them show the former things, what they were, That we may consider them, And know the latter end of them; Or declare to us things to come. ²³ Show the things that are to come hereafter, That we may know that you are gods; Yes, do good or do evil, That we may be dismayed and see it together.

Isaiah 44:6-8 (NKJV) ⁶ "Thus says the Lord, the King of Israel, And his Redeemer, the Lord of hosts: 'I am the First and I am the Last; Besides Me there is no God. ⁷ And who can proclaim as I do? Then let him declare it and set it in order for Me, Since I appointed the ancient people. And the things that are coming and shall come, Let them show these to them. ⁸

Do not fear, nor be afraid; Have I not told you from that time, and declared *it*? You *are* My witnesses. Is there a God besides Me? Indeed *there is no other Rock; I know not one.*”

Isaiah 46:9–10 (NKJV) ⁹ Remember the former things of old, For I *am* God, and *there is* no other; I *am* God, and *there is* none like Me, ¹⁰ Declaring the end from the beginning, And from ancient times *things* that are not *yet* done, Saying, 'My counsel shall stand, And I will do all My pleasure.'

John 13:18–19 (NKJV) ¹⁸ "I do not speak concerning all of you. I know whom I have chosen; but that the Scripture may be fulfilled, '*He who eats bread with Me has lifted up his heel against Me.*' ¹⁹ Now I tell you before it comes, that when it does come to pass, you may believe that I am *He*.

2 Peter 1:19–21 (NKJV) ¹⁹ And so we have the prophetic word confirmed, which you do well to heed as a light that shines in a dark place, until the day dawns and the morning star rises in your hearts; ²⁰ knowing this first, that no prophecy of Scripture is of any private interpretation, ²¹ for prophecy never came by the will of man, but holy men of God spoke as *they were moved by the Holy Spirit*.

Only This Book is Bold Enough / 300 prophecies of Jesus / 25% of Book

Only this book has the boldness to prophesy. 300 prophecies of Jesus Christ fulfilled, and I am not talking about the several hundred other prophecies as they relate to Israel, empires, the Church, and other areas. Twenty-five percent of this book speaks of prophecies. And to date, not one has yet to fail.

Top 8

His Birth & Lineage

- 1.) The Messiah would be born in Bethlehem. Micah 5:2a / Matthew 2:1-2
- 2.) The Messiah would be a descendant of David. Isaiah 9:7 / Matthew 1:1

His Environment & the World Setting

- 3.) The Messiah would be announced to his people 483 years, to the exact day, after the decree to rebuild the city of Jerusalem. Daniel 9:25 / John 12:12-13
- 4.) The Messiah would be killed before the destruction of the temple. Daniel 9:26c / Matthew 27:50-51
- 5.) The Jew's authority to administer capital punishment would be gone when the Messiah arrived. Genesis 49:10c / John 18:31

His Death

- 6.) The Messiah would be sacrificed on the same mountain where God tested Abraham. Genesis 22:14 / Luke 23:33
- 7.) The Messiah's back would be whipped. Isaiah 53:5c Matthew 27:26
- 8.) The Messiah's hands and feet would be pierced. Psalm 22:16c Matthew 27:38

All facts that can be backed up by historical writings

The Law of Compound Probability / The Quarter – 10 to 17th / Blindfold

The following probabilities (The Law of Compound Probability) are taken from Peter Stoner in *Science Speaks* (Moody Press, 1963) to show that coincidence is ruled out by the science of probability. Stoner says that by using the modern science of probability in reference to eight prophecies, 'we find that the chance that any man might have lived down to the present time and fulfilled all eight prophecies is 1 in 10 to the 17th.' That would be 1 in 100,000,000,000,000,000. In order to help us comprehend this staggering probability, Stoner illustrates it by supposing that "we take 10 to the 17th silver dollars and lay them on the face of Texas. They will cover all of the state two feet deep.

"Now mark one of these silver dollars and stir the whole mass thoroughly, all over the state. Blindfold a man and tell him that he can travel as far as he wishes, but he must pick up one silver dollar and say that this is the right one. What chance would he have of getting the right one? Just the same chance that the prophets would have had of writing these eight prophecies and having them all come true in any one man."

Why do people buy into this

Why do people buy into this, It's a moral question, people will say I have a problem with this, if there is a God the why doesn't He show Himself, then why is their pain and suffering in the world, then why, then why. But the issue is clearly shown in the Bible

Romans 1:20-25 -

(Romans 1:20 NKJV) For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse,

(Romans 1:21 NKJV) because, although they knew God, they did not glorify Him as God, nor were thankful, but became futile in their thoughts, and their foolish hearts were darkened.

(Romans 1:22 NKJV) Professing to be wise, they became fools,

(Romans 1:23 NKJV) and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like corruptible man; and birds and four-footed animals and creeping things.

(Romans 1:24 NKJV) Therefore God also gave them up to uncleanness, in the lusts of their hearts, to dishonor their bodies among themselves,

(Romans 1:25 NKJV) who exchanged the truth of God for the lie, and worshiped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen.

This Man will not rule over Us

To acknowledge that He does exist, that we are not a happening of random chances, would mean every man is answerable to Him. But for many, they do not want any King in their life, for they want to be on the throne of their lives, doing as they see is reasonable and allowable.

(Luke 19:14 KJV) But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this man to reign over us.

(John 19:12 KJV) And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Caesar's friend: whosoever maketh himself a king speaketh against Caesar.

People are so deceived, if only they knew that the greatest freedom comes when you surrender your life to him. They have the God who created the heaven and earth, who died for their sins, ready to live with them.

John 3:16-21 -

It all comes down to, people love their sin. John 3:19.

(John 3:16 NKJV) "For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.

(John 3:17 NKJV) "For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved.

(John 3:18 NKJV) "He who believes in Him is not condemned; but he who does not believe is condemned already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

(John 3:19 NKJV) "And this is the condemnation, that the light has come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.

(John 3:20 NKJV) "For everyone practicing evil hates the light and does not come to the light, lest his deeds should be exposed.

(John 3:21 NKJV) "But he who does the truth comes to the light, that his deeds may be clearly seen, that they have been done in God."

I met a man who said I tried to be an evolutionist, but I didn't have enough faith. It is true, it will take more faith to follow evolution, then to follow Jesus.

For me,

This Body isn't Fit for Heaven

He created us, the body we live in is for this planet, we need a new one before we go to heaven.
Time to trade it in, for this earth and that is in it is going to fade away like an old garment.